

Terra Firma. eighteen or twenty from the Sea, and is but a small Place.

Nata.

5. *NATA* is a Town-Port on the West Side of the Bay of *Panama*, about seventy Miles South-West of the City of *Panama*. Their chief Dependance is on Cattle, Hogs and Poultry, with which they serve the Markets of *Panama*; for the Country about that City is so very barren, that they would frequently be in danger of famishing, if they were not supplied, by Shipping, with Provisions from the Towns that lie at a Distance from it.

Conception.

6. THE Town of *Conception* is situated near the Mouth of the River *Conception*, which falls into the *North-Sea*, over-against *La Sounds* Key, one of the *Sanbalas* Islands; but I meet with no particular Description of this Place.

Santa Maria.

7. *SANTA MARIA* is situated six Leagues from the Sea, on the South Bank of the River to which it communicates its Name, in 7 Degrees 40 Minutes North Latitude, about thirty Leagues South-East of *Panama*, and is considerable on Account of the Gold found in the Neighbourhood of it, but does not seem to be of any great Strength, the Buccaneers and Privateers having plundered it several Times. The Country about it is low and woody, and the Ouze and Mud on the Banks of the River, occasions a noisome stinking Smell, which makes the Air very unwholesome.

Scuchadero.

8. *SCUCHADERO*, a small Town, situated on the North Side of the same River, nearer its Mouth, but standing on a good dry Soil, and open to the Gulph of *St. Michael*, from whence it is refreshed by the Sea Breezes. This is esteemed a healthful Place, and what contributes to render it more so, is a fine Rivulet of fresh Water that runs by it; for the Waters of this Province are frequently brackish: The *Spaniards*, therefore, who resort with their Slaves to the Gold Rivulets at the proper Seasons, frequently come hither for their Health and Refreshment.

Edinburgh New.

9. THE last Place I shall mention in this Province, is *New Edinburgh*, or the Place which the *Scots* gave this Name to, when they attempted to make a Settlement on the

Coast of *Darien*, or *Terra Firma Proper*, *Terra Firma.* and denominated the Country about it *New Caledonia*. This Fortrefs was situated on the Continent, near the North-West Point of the Gulph of *Darien*, in 9 Degrees North Latitude, on a most excellent Harbour (according to Dr. *Wallace*) being about a League in Length from the North-West to the South-East, half a Mile broad at the Entrance, and upwards of a Mile broad within, and large enough to contain 500 Sail of Ships, untouched from any Wind that can blow: The Fort stood upon a Peninsula, almost surrounded by the Harbour and the *North-Sea*, and the Access to the Peninsula, so defended by Rocks and Precipices, that a very little Art would have rendered it impregnable; and there was as much Land contained in it, as would have produced 10,000 Hogheads of Sugar annually, if it had been cultivated (according to *Wallace*) the Soil being rich, the Air temperate, and the Water sweet; every Thing contributed to render it healthful and convenient. The Land abounded in Venison and Poultry, and the Seas with the best Fish; and what were still greater Advantages, it stood in the Neighbourhood of the richest Gold Rivulets in *America*; and a Communication with the *South-Sea* might easily have been opened from thence by the Way of the River *Darien*, and the Gulph of *St. Michael*. The *Scots* thought themselves extremely fortunate in possessing this important agreeable Situation, which they tell us the *English*, *Dutch*, and *French*, never once discovered, and the *Spaniards* themselves were Strangers to it. Here it was the *Scots* arrived in the Month of *November*, 1699, in order to fix a Colony of their Countrymen on the Continent; the Occasion whereof it may be proper to mention in this Place.

THE Parliament of *Scotland* passed an Act in the Year 1695, for erecting a Company to trade to *Africa* and the *Indies*: By which they were authorized to plant Colonies and Settlements in the *East* and *West-Indies* under his Majesty's Letters Patent, which they also obtained; and both the *English* and *Hamburg* Merchants contributing

Terra Firma. buting very largely to this Enterprize, they equipped several Ships which failed with Forces, and every Thing requisite to plant a Colony on or near the Isthmus of *Darien*, in the Year 1698. They landed first on *Golden Island*, at the Mouth of the River *Darien*; but not liking the Situation, they went over to the Continent, and built the Fort of *Edinburgh* on the Spot of Ground already described, with the Permission of the Natives, calling the Country, which the *Indians* assigned them to plant and cultivate, *New Caledonia*. That Part of the Isthmus, which the *Indians*, their Friends, then possessed, the *Scots* inform us, extended along the *North-Sea*, from the Gulph of *Darien* to Port *Scrivan*, on the *North-Sea*, being about an Hundred and forty Miles; and from *Caret Bay*, in the South-West Part of the Gulph of *Darien*, to the Head of the River *Cheapo* on the South, about an Hundred and fifty Miles; the Breadth in some Places sixty, and in others an Hundred Miles and upwards.

THE *Indian* Princes within these Limits were eight at least, all of them then at War with the *Spaniards*, and received the *Scots* into their Country with a great Deal of Joy, in Hopes of their Assistance against their antient Enemies the *Spaniards*. The Settlement went on prosperously at first; but the *Spaniards* complaining to the Court of *England*, and declaring that they should look upon this as an Act of Hostility, *Darien* having been long subject to that Crown, as they alledged; the *English East-India* Company also complaining of this Settlement at the same Time, as an Infringement of their Charter, the *English* Parliament thought fit to interpose, and address King *William* to recal his Patent to the *Scots* Company.

THE *Scots*, on the other Hand, sent up their Agents to the Court of *England* to represent that this was no Invasion of the *Spanish* Dominions, because they were either never possessed of that Part of the Isthmus; or, if they were, they had been driven from it by the Natives, who were at that Time in the actual Possession of the Country, and at War with the *Spaniards*,

as they had been many Years before the *Terra Firma*. Arrival of the *Scots*: But how much soever the *Scots* might be in the Right, such was the Influence of the Court of *Spain*, and the *English East-India* Company, that all Measures were taken to ruin the *Scots* Settlement. The *English* Ministry prevailed on the *Hamburgers* to draw their Money out of the Stock; and the Parliament of *England* threatened the Merchants of *London*, who had any Shares in it, with their Displeasure, if they did not disengage themselves: And Orders being sent at the same Time to *Jamaica*, and the *English* Plantations in the *West-Indies*, not to suffer the *Scots* to furnish themselves with Provisions there, or give them any Assistance, our Northern Neighbours were unfortunately compelled to quit the Enterprize, which, we ourselves found Reason to regret a few Years afterwards, when *France*, in a Manner, possessed herself of all the *Spanish* Dominions; and among the rest, of this important Place, which had *Britain* remained possessed of, she might easily have stopped those Treasures coming to *Europe*, which so long enabled the *French* to carry on that second War against the Confederates. Another ill Consequence this Piece of Injustice was attended with, was the making the *Scots* our Enemies, and obliging us to purchase their Friendship again, at the Expence of almost 400,000*l.* and whether any Thing will perfectly satisfy them, but the Subversion of the *English* Constitution, is still a Question. On the other Hand, the *Scots* offered to share the Settlement with the *English*, and would have been infinitely obliged to them, if they had encouraged and supported it: Nor is there a Spot of Ground, it is agreed, on the Continent of *America*, that could be of greater Service to *Britain*, than that of *New Edinburgh*, if ever we are doomed to have a War with *Spain* and *France* again.

HAVING taken a View of the principal Places upon the Continent of *Darien*, or *Terra-Firma Proper*, I proceed to give some Description of the Islands near the Coasts of this Province, both on the *North* and *South-Seas*, which are very numerous,

Terra Firma. numerous, and of great Use to the Seafaring Men who traffick in those Seas, tho' scarce any of them are inhabited.

ON the *North-Sea*, at the Entrance of the Gulph of *Darien*, lie three Islands almost in a Triangle, which form a very good Harbour. The Eastermost of the three, and the smallest is called *Golden Island*: There is a fair deep Channel between this and the Main; it is strongly situated, being defended by a steep Rock almost all round, except the Landing-Place, which is a small Sandy Bay on the South Side. The Island is moderately high, and covered with small Trees and Shrubs, and was recommended to the *Scots East-India Company*, as a proper Place to fix their first Colony on; but finding it barren, and destitute of Provisions, the *Scots* pitched upon a Place on the opposite Shore, as has been observed already. The largest of the three Islands lies to the West of *Golden Island*, being swampy or marshy Ground, and so beset with Mangroves, that it is difficult getting on Shore. It lies near a Point of the Isthmus, which is the same Sort of Ground for a Mile or two, and is scarce parted from the Main-Land, but at High-Water, and even then Ships cannot pass between.

THE third, called the Isle of *Pines*, is a small Island, North of the other two; and rising into Hills, is a good Sea-Mark: It is covered with tall Trees, fit for building, or any other Use, and has a fine Rivulet of fresh Water in it.

THREE Leagues North-West of these lie a Multitude of small Islands, extending as far as Point *Samballas*, generally denominated the *Samballas Islands*: Some of them lie one Mile from the opposite Shore; some two Miles, and others two Miles and an Half from the Shore, and about as far from each other; and there are navigable Channels between them: The Sea between this long Range of Islands and the Continent is navigable also from one End to the other, and affords every where good Anchoring in hard, sandy Ground: It is good landing either on the Islands or the Main; and let the Wind sit how it will, Ships never want a good Road to ride in, on the Inside of one or other of these Islands,

VOL. II. N^o 101.

on which Account this Channel was the *Terra Firma*. general Rendezvous of the Buccaneers and Privateers on this Coast, especially *La Sounds Key*, and *Springers Key*, or *Island*, which do not only afford good Shelter for careening, but good Wells of fresh Water not far from the Surface, if they dig for them. But though it be such good riding on the Inside of these Keys or Islands, there lies a Ridge of dangerous Rocks on the Outside, at about Half a Mile Distance; and there are others lie under Water, between these Islands and the Gulph of *Darien*.

THE *Samballas* are generally low, flat, Sandy Islands, but have Variety of Fruit-Trees and Forest-Trees upon them; particularly the *Mammees*, *Sapadilloes*, and *Manchineel Trees*: Their Shores also afford good Shell-Fish, but no People have thought fit to plant or inhabit any of them. From the *Samballas Islands* passing to the Westward by Port *Scrivan*, and the Bay where the Town of *Nombre de Dios* once stood, we arrive at the Islands of *Bastimento*, being four or five in Number, and lying about a Mile from the Continent: They are for the most Part high Land covered with Wood; and one of them has a Spring of fresh Water in it. These, with the Main Land opposite to them, form a good Harbour, into which there is an easy Passage, with the Sea-Breeze, between the Eastermost Island and the next to it, and as good going out with the Land-Breeze the same Way. A little farther Westward, over-against *Porto-Bello*, are two small flat Islands, without Wood or Water: They lie so near the Continent, that there is but a very narrow Channel between. Beyond the *Bastimentos*, to *Porto-Bello*, the Coast is generally rocky; and within the Land the Country is full of high steep Hills, covered with Wood, unless where they are cleared for Plantations by the *Spanish Indians*, tributary to *Porto-Bello*; and these, in *Wafer's Time*, Anno 1681, were the first Settlements on the North Coast of *Darien* under the *Spanish Government*: The *Spaniards* had then neither any Command over the *Indians*, or Commerce with them to the Eastward of Port *Scrivan*. The same Writer, indeed, says,

Terra Firma. says, he was informed the *Spaniards* had courted the Natives since, and won them over to their Party; but it is certain this was not effected in the Year 1698, when the *Scots* landed on the Isthmus; for they found all the *Indians*, between the Gulph of *Darien* and Port *Scrivan*, at open War with the *Spaniards*. I proceed, in the next Place, to the Description of the Islands belonging to this Province of *Darien*, or *Terra Firma Proper*, that lie in the Bay of *Panama*, in the *South-Sea*.

THE Bay of *Panama* is of a semicircular Form, and made by Point *Garrichina* on the South-East, and *Punta Mala* on the South-West, being about 100 Miles over, and 300 in Circumference, including the Gulph of St. *Michael*, at the Mouth of the River of St. *Mary*.

THE King's or Pearl Islands, being low Woody Islands, and very numerous, lie almost in the Middle of this Bay, stretching from the South-East to the North-West; in Length about fourteen Leagues. The Northermost of them, called *Pachegue*, lies twelve Leagues South-East of *Panama*; and the Southermost of them, called St. *Paul*, twelve Leagues North-West of Point *Garrichina*; and they are generally about seven Leagues distant from the Main Land of *Darien*.

THESE Islands belong to the Citizens of *Panama*, who keep Negroes here to plant and cultivate them: They afford some Fruits, particularly Plantains and Bonanaes, and in some of them Rice is sown; but many of them, especially the largest, are wholly uncultivated, and almost over-run with Weeds, though it seems to be a fruitful Soil. These unplanted Islands shelter their fugitive Negroes, who lie concealed in the Woods in the Day-Time, and in the Night rob the *Spanish* Plantations.

THERE are narrow Channels between most of these Islands only fit for Boats to pass; but betwixt the Islands and the Main Land is a Channel seven Leagues over, where there is a sufficient Depth of Water, and good Anchoring all the Way; the Prospects on each Side extremely pleasant; for, on the Continent, are little rising

Hills, always green; and the King's Islands, *Terra Firma*, on the other Side the Channel are no less beautiful.

THE Island of *Chepelio*, situated seven Leagues East of *Panama*, and a League from the Continent, is the pleasantest Island in the Bay of *Panama*. It is about two Miles over either Way, partly high Land, and partly Vallies. The low Lands are planted with the best *Indian* Fruits; such as Sapadilloes, Avagato, Pears, Mammeces, Mamme, Supotaes, Star-Apples, &c. and the Middle of the Island with Plantains. The Islands of *Perico* are three small Islands, which lie before the City of *Panama*, about three Miles from it, and may be called the Port to that City, the great Ships lying here, because there is no Depth of Water to approach nearer.

THE Soil of the Isthmus of *Darien*, or *Terra Firma Proper*, is good in the Middle of the Province, according to *Waser*; but both the Shores of the *North* and *South-Seas* are generally either a dry barren Sand, or drowned Mangrove Land, that will scarce produce any Kind of Grain. Mr. *Wallace*, indeed, informs us, that his Countrymen, the *Scots*, were so fortunate to meet with a Spot of Ground, where they built the Fort of *New Edinburgh*, almost surrounded by the Sea; the Soil whereof was rich, the Air temperate, the Water sweet, and every Thing about it contributing to make it healthful and convenient; that the Land afforded Deer, Rabbits, Wild-Hogs, Guanoes, Turkeys, Pheasants, Partridges, and Parrots; and the Sea Manatee, Turtle, and a vast Variety of smaller Fish, from the Bigness of a Salmon to that of a Perch.

It is very possible, in the most barren and unhealthful Countries, to meet with some small Portions of it that differ from the rest; and such was *New Caledonia*, it seemg, where the *Scots* proposed to fix their Colony: But still it is very certain, that the Sea Coasts of this Province are generally unhealthful, being excessive hot, and very wet two Thirds of the Year; and all Travellers agree, that the Surface of the Mountains, which have Mines in them, produce scarce any Thing but Shrubs. The Coun-

try

Terra Firma. try about *Panama*, the Capital City, is so exceeding poor, that their Corn, Flesh, and other Provisions, are brought them by Sea, from Countries at a very great Distance; and that City would be starved, if their Communication with their Neighbours by Sea, was cut off half a Year; for though the Heart of the Country is said to be fruitful, yet very little of it is cleared of Wood, or cultivated. As to the *Indians*, they are not very numerous; and they clear no more Ground than just serves their respective Families, sowing a little *Indian* Corn, and having small Gardens in the Woods, that produce Plantains and Potatoes, and some other Fruits and Roots, which, with what they take in Hunting and Fishing, furnishes them with a poor Subsistence; and as to the *Spaniards*, they seem to be above working and cultivating the Ground, both in the Old and New World.

THE little that is cleared and planted in *America*, is done by the Negroes or the *Indians*; and though the Country might yield good Crops of Grain and Grass, if it were inhabited by an industrious People, yet, in the present Situation of Affairs, it affords but little Provision; inasmuch that our Buccaneers, the hardiest Race of Men upon Earth, who have marched through it, and plundered the *Spanish* Towns, have been more in Danger of Famine than any other Enemy. And should the *English* ever attempt to dislodge the *Spaniards* from the Isthmus, they must carry a double Stock of Provisions with them; for I question, whether the Country would be able to subsist a thousand Men in their March.

Persons and Habits of the Darien Indians.

THE *Indians* of *Darien* resemble those in the Eastern Provinces of *Mexico*, only it is observed, as they approach nearer the Equator, their Complexions are darker. When they are engaged in Hunting, Fishing, Planting, or any laborious Exercises, they usually go naked, having their Skins painted with various Colours and Figures; but they have their Robes of Ceremony (as *Waser* calls them) both white and black, that are made of Cotton Linen, and reach down to their Heels; and the

Men wear Coronets of Cane on their *Terra Firma.* Head, adorned with Feathers: Nor do they ever stir abroad without their Arms, their Bows, Arrows, Lances and Daggers, or great Knives; and many of them, of late, use Fire-Arms, which they purchase of the *Europeans*.

WAFER observes, that both Men and Women are of a round Visage; have short Bottle Noses; their Eyes large, lively, and sparkling: They have high Foreheads, white, even Teeth, thin Lips, and Mouths moderately large; their Cheeks and Chins well proportioned; and they have, in general, fine Features; but the Men more so than the Women: Both Sexes have long black Hair, coarse and strong, which they usually wear down to the Middle of their Backs, or lower, at full Length; only the Women tie it together with a String just behind the Head, from whence it flows loose like the Mens. They suffer no other Hair to grow, but that on their Heads, their Eye-Brows, and Eye-Lids: Their Beards and all below, are pulled up by the Roots, as soon as any appears; and they have the same Custom as the *East-Indians* and *Africans* have, in anointing their Heads and Bodies with Oil or Fat.

THERE are, it seems, among these dark-complexioned *Indians*, some that are perfectly white, in the Province of *Terra Firma Proper*: Their Skins, says my Author, are not of such a White, as our fair People in *Europe*, who have some Tincture of Red in their Complexion: Nor is it like that of our paler People, but a pure Milk-White; and there grows upon their Bodies a fine, short, milk-white Down, through which, however, the Skin appears. The Hair of their Heads and Eye-Brows, also, is white, growing to the Length of six or eight Inches, and inclining to curl. These People are less in Stature than other *Indians*. Their Eye-lids also are differently formed, bending like the Horns of the Moon; from whence, and their seeing so well by Moon Light, the Buccaneers call them Moon-eyed. They cannot see at all in the Sunshine; and, therefore, scarce ever go abroad in the Day-

Terra Firma. Day-Time, unless in dark cloudy Weather. In Moon-shiny Nights, they are all Life and Activity, says my Author, skipping about like Wild Bucks, and hunting in the Woods; for they are as nimble as the other *Indians*, though not so strong and big-boned.

THEY are contemned by the Copper-coloured *Indians*, who look upon this white Complexion as monstrous, and to proceed from Infirmary or Defect: They are not a distinct Race by themselves, but proceed from tawny Parents on both Sides. And though some have suspected these white Children to be the Issue of some *Europeans* upon *Indian* Women, my Author says, it is not at all probable; First, because few *Europeans* come into this Country; Secondly, because the Issue of an *European* and an *Indian* is not white, but only a brighter Tawney than the *Indians*; and, Thirdly, this Complexion is a different White, as has been observed already, from any Thing seen amongst us; but it is very unaccountable, that the Issue of these white *Indians* are not white like their Parents, but Copper-coloured: And *Waser* relates it, as the Conjecture of one of the *Indian* Princes, that this Whiteness proceeds from the Force of the Mother's Imagination, looking at the Moon at the Time of Conception: But, perhaps, the Reason of this very white Complexion of the *Darien Indians*, and the very dark Complexion of the Negroes, will be found out together: I shall only observe here, that though a great deal is ascribed to the Strength of the Womens Imagination in both Cases; yet, other Causes, probably, concur, to make such remarkable Differences in the Complexions of Mankind.

THE Men in this Province, like those in *Mexico*, wear Silver and Gold Plates in their Noses, which hang down over their Lips; and the Women Rings of the same Metal: They have also Pendants in their Ears, Chains of Beads and Shells about their Necks, and other Ornaments as the *Mexican Indians* wear. Their Houses also are built in the same Manner, and their

Lodging is generally in Hammocks. Nor *Terra Firma* is their Food or Exercise different from what has been related already of the other *Indians*, who have preserved their Liberties, and are not yet under the Dominion of the *Spaniards*; and, therefore, I shall not weary my Readers with the Repetition of these Articles.

THE Reason the *Indians* of *Darien* have so long maintained their Independency, notwithstanding it was the first Province on the *Terra Firma*, the *Spaniards* discovered, and is of such Importance to them to be Masters of, as it lies upon both Seas, is, that the Country, in many Places, is inaccessible. The Torrents that fall, for two Thirds of the Year, from the Mountains into the *North* and *South-Seas*, are scarce passable by any but the Natives. These, and the thick Woods, cut off all Manner of Communication between *Panama* and *Peru* by Land: There is, therefore, no Road through the Country; but whoever goes from *Panama* to *Peru*, is forced to go by Sea. Our Buccancers have ever found it extremely difficult to cross the Country from the *North* to the *South-Sea*: But it would have been much more difficult to travel the Length of the Country from East to West, as they must have crossed ten Times more Rivers than they did the other Way: However, the Country People, Men, Women, and Children, if we may credit *Waser*, swim over those Torrents frequently, and are in no Danger of being overtaken, or surprized by the *Spaniards*; their Horse finding it impracticable to march over their numerous Rivers and Mountains. And since, the *Spaniards* have found it impossible to subdue this Province entirely, and that other Nations have treated with the Natives, and endeavoured to establish Colonies amongst them; they have, at length, seen their Error, in treating these *Indians* as Enemies; and, therefore, of late Years, have endeavoured to cultivate a Friendship with them. However, as the Natives are still in Possession of the best Part of their Country, I cannot see, why we might not treat with them, and endeavour to plant *English* Colonies

Terra Firma.

Colonies in the Isthmus, if *Spain* persist in her Depredations on our People in that Part of the World, and cannot be prevailed on to accommodate the Differences between the two Nations.

Carthage-
na
Province.

2. THE Province of *Carthage-
na* is bounded by the *North-Sea* on the North; by the Province of *St. Martha* on the East; by *Popayan* and *New Granada* on the South; and by the Gulph of *Darien*, which separates it from *Terra Firma Proper*, on the West; and it is said to be 300 Miles in Length from North to South, and about 200 in Breadth from East to West. The chief Towns are, 1. *Carthage-
na* the Capital. 2. *Madre de Popa*. 3. *Cenu*; and, 4. *Tolu*.

Carthage-
na
City.

CARTHAGENA is situate in a Peninsula, on a Bay of the *North-Sea*, in 11 Degrees North Latitude, and 76 Degrees of Western Longitude, lying about 100 Leagues to the Eastward of *Porto-Bello*. It being one of the best and securest Harbours in *Spanish America*, great Part of the Treasures of *Terra Firma* are lodged here, to be exported to *Europe* by the Gallies.

St. Martha
Province.

3. THE Province of *St. Martha* is bounded by the *North-Sea* on the North; by *Rio de la Hacha* on the East; by *New Granada* on the South; and by *Carthage-
na* on the West; being about 300 Miles in Length from East to West, and 200 in Breadth from North to South. This is a very mountainous Country, and according to *Dampier*, higher Land than the Pike of *Teneriffe*, or any other Land in the known World, being seen at Sea near 200 Miles. From these Mountains run a Chain of Hills, almost directly South, quite thro' *South America* to the Streights of *Magellan*. Those which bound *Peru* on the East, and are usually called the *Andes*, are a Part of them.

St. Martha
City.

THE chief Towns of this Province are, 1. *St. Martha*. 2. *Ramada*. 3. *Baranca*. 4. *Ciudad de los Reys*; and, 5. *Tamalameque*.

ST. Martha the Capital, which gives Name to the Province, is situated on a Bay of the *North-Sea*, in 11 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, and 74 Degrees

of Western Longitude. It has a large Harbour formed by the Continent, and two Islands that lie before it. This Town is a Bishop's See, and the Seat of the Governor and Courts of Justice.

4. THE Province of *Rio de la Hacha* is bounded by the *North-Sea* on the North; by the Province of *Venezuela* on the East; by *Granada* on the South; and, by that of *St. Martha* on the West. It is a small Province and frequently reckoned a Part of that of *St. Martha*: It abounds in Corn and Cattle, and has a Pearl-Fishery upon the Coast, and some Salt-Works.

THE chief Towns are, 1, *Rio de la Hacha*; and, 2. *Rancheria*.

THE Town of *Rio de la Hacha*, is situated near the *North-Sea*, on a River of the same Name, in 11 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, to the Eastward of the Town of *St. Martha*. This Place has been so often plundered by Enemies and Buccaneers, that the *Spaniards* abandoned it for a Time, but have taken Possession of it again.

5. THE Province of *Venezuela*, in which I include the District of *Caracos*, is bounded by the *North-Sea* on the North; by *New Andalusia* on the East; by *Granada* on the South; and *Rio de la Hacha* on the West; being about 400 Miles in Length from East to West, and 300 in Breadth from North to South. This is the most Northerly Province of *South America*, the Capes of *La Vela* and *Conquibacoa*, lying in 12 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude.

THIS Province has as many populous Towns as any Part of *South America*; the chief whereof are, 1. *Venezuela*. 2. *Caracos*. 3. *Maracaibo*. 4. *Gibraltar*. 5. *St. Jago de Leon*. 6. *New Segovia*. 7. *Tucuyo*. 8. *Trugillo*. 9. *Laguna*; and, 10. *Maricapano*.

VENEZUELA, or *Little Venice*, is so called from its Situation in the Waters, stands upon a Peninsula near a Gulph, to which it communicates its Name, in 11 Degrees of North Latitude, and 69 Degrees of Western Longitude, and has frequently the Name of *Coro* in our Maps: It is the Capital of the Province, the Residence of the Governor, and the Courts

Terra Firma. of Justice, and a Bishop's See, Suffragan to the Archbishop of St. Domingo, in *Hispaniola*.

Andalusia
Province.

6. *NEW ANDALUSIA*, in which I shall comprehend the Districts of *Comena* and *Paria*, and bound it by the *North-Sea* on the North; by the River *Oronoque*, which divides it from *Caribbiana*, or *Guiana*, on the East; by the Country of the *Amazons* on the South; and by the Provinces of *Granada* and *Venezuela* on the West; extending in Length, from North to South, 500 Miles and upwards; and in Breadth, from East to West, between two and three Hundred Miles. The principal River which waters this Country, and into which fall many considerable Streams, is that of *Oronoque* or *Paria*, which rises in the Mountains of *Andes*, in the Kingdom of *Peru*, not far from the *South-Sea*, and running directly East for near 2000 Miles, then turns to the North, and, continuing that Course above 1000 Miles more, falls into the *North-Sea* by several Channels, between 8 and 9 Degrees of North Latitude. The chief Towns are, 1. *Cemana* 2. *Verina*; and, 3. *St. Thomas*.

Caribbiana
Province.

7. *CARIBBIANA*, bounded by the Northern or *Atlantick Ocean* on the North and East; by the Country of the *Amazons* on the South, and by the Provinces of *Granada* and *New Andalusia* on the West: It extends from the Equator to the 8th Degree of North Latitude, and lies between 50 and 63 Degrees of Western Longitude, extending 1200 Miles and upwards along the *Atlantick Ocean*, viz. from the Mouth of the River *Oronoque*, to the Mouth of the River of *Amazons*. Some divide it into two Parts, calling the one the Sea-Coast *Caribbiana*, and the Inland Country *Guiana*.

SEVERAL European Powers have Settlements on or near the Sea-Coasts of this Country, particularly the *Spaniards*, the *French* and *Dutch*; but the Natives are yet possessed of much the greatest Part of it, and are not in Subjection to any of them, unless upon the Sea-Coast. There are Abundance of considerable Rivers (besides those of *Oronoque*, and the River *Amazon*, already mentioned) and these

having their Sources in the Mountains, on *Terra Firma*, the South-West, generally run towards the North-East, and fall into the *Atlantick Ocean*.

THE *English* had formerly some Settlements on this Coast, which were yielded to the *Dutch* by the Treaty of *Breda*, in the Year 1667; and the *Dutch* and *French* have still a great many Forts and Settlements here, with a good Extent of Country, near the Mouths of the Rivers, which furnish them with Sugar, Tobacco, Cotton, Flax, Skins, or Feltry, Drugs, Dying Woods, and several other considerable Articles: But I do not find they have met with any Mines of Gold or Silver, which our first Adventurers expected.

THE chief *Dutch* Settlement is that of *Surinam*, situated five Leagues within the River of the same Name, in 6 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude. They have given the Name of *Surinam* to all the Country about this Fortreis for several Hundred Miles, and look upon themselves as Sovereigns of it; and, indeed, these are the only considerable Acquisitions the *Dutch* have had in *America* since the *Portuguese* drove them from *Brazil*, and the *English* from *New York*.

THE chief *French* Settlement is that of *Cayenne*, situated on an Island at the Mouth of a River of the same Name, in 5 Degrees of North-Latitude, above 110 Leagues to the Northward of the River of *Amazons*. The Island is about seven Leagues long, and three broad, well wooded and watered with Rivulets, and has several good *French* Towns upon it, besides Villages of *Indians*, producing Sugar, Tobacco, *Indian Corn*, and other Grain and Plants, like the neighbouring Continent, and is held to be more healthful as it lies open to the Sea-Breezes. The *Dutch* Admiral *Binks* took it from the *French* in the Year 1676; and the Count *De Estres*, the *French* Admiral, recovered it in the same Year, and it was long contended for by *France* and *Holland*; but the *French* are now in Possession of this Island, and as their Settlements extend to the Southward, as far as the Equinoctial, it is said they have given the Name of *Equinoctial France* to all the Sea-Coasts between

Terra Firma. between the River of *Cayenne* and the River of *Amazons*.

Persons.

As to the Persons of the *Indians* of *Guiana* and *Caribbiana*, their Complexion is a dark Copper-Colour, as all those are that lie so near the Equator; but they resemble their more Northern Neighbours of *Terra Firma* in Size and Features. Here are no Nations, or Tribes of a gigantick or diminutive Stature, as the first Discoverers pretended. Those who live in the Neighbourhood of the *Europeans*, wear some little Cloathing, for Decency Sake; but the rest scarce any, either Men or Women: Tho' in Ornaments most of the *Americans* seem to agree, as in Plates and Rings for their Lips and Noses; heavy Strings of Beads and Shells about their Necks, that reach almost down to their Bellies; and in anointing and painting their Faces and Bodies: And instead of Beds they use Hammocks in most Countries, both of *North* and *South America*: And Giants, Dwarfs and Monsters seem at present to be expelled from this Continent, though our first Discoverers met with scarce any Thing else. The Case seems much the same as to Canibals: There was not a Province in *America* where we were not assured there were Tribes of these; but in *Caribbiana*, the Country I am now describing, we were told they were all Devourers of their own Species: That it was dangerous for a Man to sleep near his best Friend, lest he should take that Opportunity of murdering him, in order to feast upon his Carcase; and yet for these last Hundred Years, we meet with no Canibals here, or any where else. That People have eaten one another, driven to it by Famine, is possible, and an Instance or two of this Nature have been thought sufficient to denominate the whole Country Canibals. Men may sometimes also have sacrificed their own Species to their Gods, of which others have had such an Abhorrence, that they made no Difficulty to believe they eat the Sacrifice, especially when it was usual to feast upon other Animals sacrificed to Idols by almost all People: But further, every Nation, in Countries where Ignorance prevails, look upon other Nations, especially their Enemies, as barbarous, and

are perpetually making or telling Stories to *Terra Firma*. create in their Acquaintance an Abhorrence of them. And as nothing is more detestable than the killing and eating our own Species, all People almost seem to have agreed in charging this Piece of Barbarity upon their Enemies, and those they have little Acquaintance with. I make no Doubt but many of the *American* Nations, as others had done in *Asia* and *Europe*, charged their Enemies with this Instance of Barbarism, and when the *Europeans* came amongst them, were full of these Stories, which our credulous Seamen took upon Trust, and some of them possibly went so far as to say they had seen the *Americans* kill, dress, and make a Meal of their Enemies: After which no Man was thought to have made any Discoveries in that Part of the World, who could not say he was conversant with those supposed Devourers of Human Flesh. And this was the Reason every Traveller almost brought Home some Account of the Canibals he had seen in every other Part of *America*, as well as this. But can we suppose that the Popish Missionaries, and others, would so often have ventured themselves in the inland and unsubdued Parts of *America*, and especially in *Caribbiana*, without a Guard, as we are assured they have done, if they had not been satisfied these Relations were fabulous? A certain Traveller informs us, indeed, that being about to pass through *Caribbiana*, the many Relations he had met with of their devouring their Enemies and Strangers, had made such an Impression on him, that he communicated his Fears to one of their Caciques, who could not help expressing his Indignation, that he should entertain such Thoughts of their People; declaring, that a Foreigner might pass through their Country with as much Security as he could propose in travelling through any other. To this give me Leave to add, what I have observed before, in treating of *Asia*: That it appears several Nations, who have been charged with eating Human Flesh, have been so far from it, that they have eat no Flesh at all; but lived upon Roots, Herbs, Fruits, or Pulse, scarce eating any Thing that had Life, some

Terra Firma. some of them making Conscience of eating any Animal.

OUR Buccaneers, who have traversed the most barbarous and uncultivated Parts of *America*, and seem to be very ready to give into these Stories of Canibals, have not, as I remember, been able to give us one Instance of their having seen any one Man eaten; only they tell us, that one of their Comrades being taken by the *Indians*, they supposed he was roasted, and eaten; because, the next Day, they came to a Place where a great Fire had been made, and discovered Human Bones in Ashes; which they might have done if the *Indians* had only burnt their Friend in *Terrorem*, as well as if they had broiled and eaten him. Nor is it at all improbable, the Man was burnt; for the Buccaneers have frequently committed such *Outrages*, both upon the *Spaniards* and *Indians*, as to induce them to retaliate the Injuries they have received, by putting them to the cruelest Deaths. I shall conclude this Topick with Mr. *Dampier's* Opinion of the Matter, who had visited as many Parts of the World as any *Englishman* ever did, and especially several Places in *America*, said to be inhabited by Canibals, having been himself a Buccaneer.

As for the common Opinion of Man-Eaters (says that Gentleman) I did never meet with any such People; and all Nations and Families in the World, that I have seen or heard of, having some Sort of Food to live on; either Fruit, Grain, Pulse, or Roots, which grow naturally, or else are planted by them; if not Fish and Land Animals besides; yet, even the People of *New Holland* had Fish amidst all their Penury, and would scarce kill a Man purposely to eat him. I know not what barbarous Customs may have formerly been in the World. To sacrifice their Enemies to their Gods, is a Thing that is much talked of, with relation to the Savages of *America*. I am a Stranger to that also, if it be, or has been customary in any Nation there: And yet, if they sacrifice their Enemies, it is not necessary they should eat them too. After all, I will not be peremptory in the Negative; but I

speaking as to the Compass of my own *Terra Firma*, Knowledge, and know some of these Canibal Stories to be false; and many of them have been disproved since I went to the *West-Indies*. At that Time how barbarous were the poor *Florida Indians* accounted, whom now we find to be civil enough! What strange Stories have we heard of the *Indians*! Whole Islands were called the Isles of Canibals (*Caribbees*) yet we find they trade very civilly with the *French* and *Spaniards*, and have done so with us. I do own, that they have formerly endeavoured to destroy our Plantations in *Barbadoes*, and have hindered us from settling the Island of *St. Lucia*, by destroying two or three Colonies successively; and even the Island of *Tobago* has been often annoyed and ravaged by them, when settled by the *Dutch*, and still lies waste (tho' a delicate fruitful Island) as being too near the *Caribbees* on the Continent, who visit it every Year. But this was to preserve their own Right, by endeavouring to keep out any that should settle themselves on these Islands where they had planted themselves; yet even these would not hurt a single Person, as I have been told by some, that have been Prisoners amongst them. I could instance also the *Indians* of *Boca-Toro* and *Boca-Draco*, and many other Places where they do live, as the *Spaniards* call it, wild and savage, yet there they have been familiar with Privateers, but by Abuses have withdrawn their Friendship again. And as for the *Nicobar* People (an Island in the Gulph of *Bengal*, reported to be inhabited by Canibals) I found them affable enough; and therefore did not fear them.

THE Relations of there being Nations of Giants and Dwarfs in *South-America*, seems to have no better Foundation than the Stories of Canibals. There may have been Men seen above the common Size there, as we find some tall People in *Ireland* and *Germany*; but these are not common any where any more than Dwarfs; though some Travellers relate, they have seen Nations, where a Person three Feet high was looked upon as a tall Man amongst them.

Terra Firma.

BUT there is nothing the common People in every Country seem to have been more universally agreed in, than in their Notions of Magick, Witchcraft, and a visible and a familiar Conversation that some Pretenders to the Black-Art have with the Spirit of Darkness; by whose Assistance they gratify their Revenge upon their Enemies, foretel future Events, and know Things transacted at the greatest Distance the very Moment they are done.

EVERY Nation of the *Americans*, and especially of the *Caribbees*, pretend to have some such Adepts amongst them; and this Office of Conjuror or Diviner is generally assigned to their Priests, possibly for no other Reason, but because they are sometimes superior to the common People in their Experience and Knowledge of Nature; which has made many a Man looked upon as a Conjuror in this Part of the World, particularly the celebrated Friar Bacon; and it is not unlikely, that the Priest or Conjuror endeavours sometimes to contribute to the Cheat, to keep up or advance his Reputation amongst ignorant People.

MR. *Waser*, Surgeon to a Company of Buccaneers, who resided a considerable Time among the *Darien Indians* in the Year 1681, gives the following Account of these Pawawers, or pretended Conjurors of *Terra Firma*. He says, enquiring of the *Indians* when they expected any Ships, they sent for some of their Conjurors, who immediately went to work to raise the Devil, and enquire at what Time a Ship would arrive; and first, they made a Partition in the House with Hammocks, that the Pawawers might be by themselves; they continued some Time in their Exercise, and *Waser* and his Comrades heard them making most hideous Yellings and Shrieks, imitating the Voices of all Manner of Animals; they beat also on their Wooden-Drums, sounded their Conch-Shells, and had some String-Instruments they played upon; making all together a horrible Noise: Then they broke out into loud Exclamations, which were followed with a profound Silence; and receiving no Answer, after they had waited a considera-

ble Time, they came and turned all the Christians out of the House, and then went to work again; but still receiving no Answer, after an Hour or more, they made a new Search, and finding some of the Christians Clothes hanging up in a Basket, they threw them out of Doors, and then fell to pawawing again: After a little Time they came out in a Muck-sweat, and going down to the River and washing themselves, they returned and delivered their Oracle to this Effect: That the tenth Day, from that Time, there would arrive two Ships, and in the Morning of that Day they should hear the first Gun, and some Time after another: That one of the Christians should die soon after, and that going on Board they should lose one of their Muskets. They were so particular also to tell them that the Demon informed them one of them would be an *English* Ship; of the other they were doubtful, but said, they were afraid it would prove a *Spanish* Ship; which Prediction, *Waser* assures us, was exactly fulfilled; even as to that Circumstance, that one of the Ships was *Spanish*, and under the Command of a *Spaniard* at the Time of the Pawawing; but was afterwards taken by the *English* Privateer, which arrived with her upon the Coast; and *Waser* and his Comrades were no sooner on Board the *English* Privateer, but *Goppy*, one of their Company, died, having been over-set, and half drowned in going on Board, and lost his Musket, as the Pawawers had foretold.

As these Things are no Part of our Creed, People are at Liberty to give what Credit to them they please; but *Waser's* taking Notice that these Pawawers could do nothing as long as the Christians, or any Thing that belonged to them, were in the House, puts me in Mind of the Pretensions of the *East-Indians* to the like Commerce with Satan, to whom (if we may believe them) he appears personally, and entertains frequent Conversations with them in the Night; but when any of our Soldiers have offered to go with them, and be Witnesses of their Conferences with the Spirit of Darkness, they always refused them this Favour, alledging he would not appear

Terra Firma. if any Christian was present, which smells strongly of a Cheat; for many of our People who resort to these Countries, have not more Christianity than the *Indians* themselves, if we may judge by their *Morals*: Satan need not be afraid to appear before them on Account of their Sanctity; and even *Waser* tells us, in another Place, that he gave very little Credit to these Appearances of the Devil; for when one of these Pawawers told the Company he appeared, and pretended to hold a Conversation with him, they saw nothing, nor heard any Voice but their own.

As to their Religion, we are told, that these People have a great Veneration for the Sun and Moon, as the *Mexicans* have; but pay them no Divine Honours, or apply to them in their Distresses, but to inferior Demons, to which our Travellers have given the Appellation of Devils; tho' it is very possible, that the *Indians*, as well as the Pagans of old, look upon them as a Kind of Mediators to the Supreme Being, and worship them as such. They may, also, be apprehensive of Mischief from an Evil Spirit, as the *East-Indians* are, and endeavour to appease him, by paying him Divine Honours; but most of the Accounts we have yet received of these Things, have very much the Air of Fable.

Granada.

THE Province of *New Granada* is bounded by the Provinces of *St. Martha*, *Venezuela*, and *New Andalusia* on the North; by *Guiana* or *Carribiana*, on the East; by the Country of the *Amazons* on the South; and by *Popayan* on the West; being about 600 Miles in Length from the North-East to the South-West, and 500 in Breadth. This large inland Country affords a Variety of Hills and fruitful Valleys, watered with navigable Rivers, and esteemed as healthful, as any Part of *Terra Firma*. The chief Rivers are, 1. The River *Grande*, or *Magdalena*, which rising in the South runs directly cross it, falling into the *North Sea*, to the Northward of *Corthagena*. 2. The River *Oroonogue*, which rising in *Popayan*, runs directly East, the whole length of this Province; and then

turning to the Northward, falls into the *Terra Firma* *North-Sea* against the Island of *Trinidad*.

THE chief Towns are, 1. *Santa-Fe de Bogota*. 2. *Tocama*. 3. *Pampeluna*. 4. *Velez*. 5. *Trinidad*. 6. *Palma*. 7. *Tunia*; and, 8. *St. John de Lanos*.

SANTA-FE de Bogota is situated in the Lake *Guatavita*, a little to the Eastward of the River *Magdalena*, in 4 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, and 74 Degrees Western Longitude, in a plentiful Country, that abounds in Corn and Cattle. This is the most considerable Town in all the *Terra Firma*, the Seat of the Governor and the Courts of Justice, and an Archbishop's See, to whom the Bishops of *St. Martha*, *Carthagena*, and *Popayan* are Suffragans.

THE Province of *Popayan* is bounded *Popayan* by the Province of *Terra Firma Proper* on the North; by *New Granada* on the East; by the Audience of *Quito* in *Peru* on the South; and by the *Pacifick Ocean* on the West, extending in Length from North to South 400 Miles, and in Breadth 300. A Chain of barren Mountains almost impassable, runs through the Country from North to South; some of which are Volcanoes, and in one of them the Loadstone is found. Towards the Shores of the *South-Sea*, the land is low and flat; and as it rains near three Quarters of the Year, innumerable Rivers and Torrents fall from the Mountains into the *South-Sea*, in the Sand whereof is found a great deal of Gold Dust, which induces the *Spaniards* to build towns, and reside in some parts of it, how uncomfortable soever it may be to live just under, or near the Equator, where the Heats and Rains are extremely troublesome, as well as unwholesome.

THE chief Towns are, 1. *Popayan*. 2. *Agreda*, or *St. John de Paslo*; and, 3. *Madrigal*.

THE City of *Popayan* is situated at the Foot of the Mountains, on a fruitful Plain in 3 Degrees of North Latitude, and 76 Degrees of Western Longitude. It is a Bishop's See, Suffragan of *Santa-Fe*, the Seat of the Governor, and of the Courts

of

Terra Firma. of Justice, and is said to be a large Town, and a Place of good Trade,

Islands of Terra Firma in the South-Sea.

THE Islands near the Coast of *Terra Firma* in the *South-Sea* are, 1. *Gorgona*, a pretty high woody Island, producing large tall Trees, and several Springs of good Water, lies in 3 Degrees North Latitude, and 4 Leagues West of the Continent; the Anchoring-Place in a deep Sandy Bay at the West End of the Island. It is about six Miles in Length and four in Breadth, but uninhabited. Between the Island *Gorgona* and the River *Bonaventura*, twenty-five Leagues North-East of it, are several small Rivers, in the Sands whereof the *Spanish Indians* find Gold Dust, that is washed down from the neighbouring Mountains.

THE Island of *Gallo* lies twenty-five Leagues to the Southward of *Gorgona*, in a deep Bay, on the North-East Part whereof is good Riding for Ships.

THE Islands of *Gorgona* and *Gallo* have been frequently visited by the Buccaneers and other Adventurers, who take in Wood and Water, careen their Ships, and wait for *Spanish Prizes* here; these Islands lying in the Road from *Peru* to *Panama*, near *Cape Francisco*, about twenty-five Leagues to the Southward of *Gallo*. Sir *Francis Drake* took that rich Prize from the *Spaniards*, called the *Cacafogo*, in which he found eighty Pound Weight of refined Gold, twenty-six Tons of Silver, and a considerable Quantity of Precious Stones and Pearls; and near the same Cape, our Countryman *Dampier* took two Prizes from the *Spaniards* in the Year 1704: But these were laden only with Provisions, viz. Wine, Brandy, Sugar, Marmalade, Flour, Bacon, Chocolate, &c. which the *Spaniards* were carrying from *Peru* to supply the City of *Panama*. This *Cape Francisco* lies in 1 Degree North Latitude, and in 81 Degrees odd Minutes Western Longitude.

To the Southward of *Cape Francisco*, lies *Cape Passero*, just under the Equator, or rather 8 Minutes South of it; which is another Station where our Privateers use to wait for the *Spanish Plate Fleets* going from

Peru to *Panama*. The Land near this Cape *Terra Firma.* is mountainous and woody.

I PROCEED in the next Place, to describe the rest of the Islands on the Coast of *Terra Firma* in the *North-Sea*, which lie between the Mouth of the River *Oroonoke* on the East, and the Entrance of the Gulph of *Venezuela* or *Maracaibo* on the West.

THE principal of these Islands, and the most Easterly is that of *Trinity*, subject to the *Spaniards*; so named by *Columbus*, who discovered it in his third Voyage, Anno 1498. It is situate near the Mouth of the River *Oroonoke*, three Miles from the Continent of *Paria*, or *New-Andalusia*, between 9 and 12 Degrees of North Latitude, and 60 and 64 Degrees of Western Longitude; and is about thirty Leagues in Length and twenty in Breadth. The Air is deemed unhealthful; but the Soil tolerably fertile, producing Sugar, Cotton, Indian Corn and Fruits, and the best Tobacco the *Spaniards* are Masters of. The chief Town is named *St. Joseph*, situated on a Bay of the Sea, over-against the Continent. It was taken by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in the Year 1595, and by the *French* in 1676, who besides their Plunder extorted 80,000 Pieces of Eight from the *Spaniards* to ransom it from the Flames.

TABAGO lies a little to the North-East of *Trinity*; but this belonging to *Great-Britain*, will be described among the rest of the *British Islands* in *America*:

THE most considerable *Spanish* Island on this Coast, next to *Trinity*, is that of *Margaretta*, situate in 12 Degrees North Latitude, forty Leagues to the Westward of *Trinity*, and seven or eight Leagues from the Continent. It is about sixteen Leagues in Length and eight in Breadth, high Land, and had the Name given it by the *Spaniards* on Account of the fine Pearl Fishery they found there, which seems to be exhausted at present. The Soil affords *Indian* Corn and Fruits, and the *Spaniards* have introduced many of the Plants and Fruits of *Spain*; but they are forced to import all the Water they drink from

Terra Firma. from the Continent, and there is very little Wood or Pasture to be met with on the Island. The chief Town is that of *Montpater*, at the East End of the Island, defended by a good Fort, where the Governor resides.

SALT-TORTUGA, fourteen Leagues to the Westward of *Margaretta*, so named from its Salt Pits, and to distinguish it from *French Tortuga* on the North Coast of *Hispaniola* and *Tortuga* near the South Cape of *Florida*, every one of which received their Names from the Number of Tortoises that resort thither at the Season to lay their Eggs. This *Tortuga* is a barren desert Island, yielding neither Corn or Grass, and is not more than ten or twelve Miles in Circumference, only valuable to the *Spaniards*, on Account of the Salt they sell to Foreigners, particularly to the Inhabitants of the *Caribbee-Islands*.

THE Islands of *Orchilla*, *Roca*, and *Aves*, are small inconsiderable Islands, situated to the Westward of *Tortuga*, and scarce deserve mentioning, except for a good Harbour in the Middle of that of *Aves*, on the North Side, whither the Buccaneers frequently resort to careen their Ships, and take in fresh Water. A *French* Squadron of Men of War, commanded by Count *D'Estrees*, was cast away on the Rocks that lie before this Island in the Year 1678, and not two of their Ships saved.

A LITTLE to the Westward of *Aves*, lies the Island of *Bonayre*, in Form of a Crescent, about sixteen Leagues in Compass, and twenty Leagues North of the Coast of *Caracos*; the Middle of the Island in 12 Degrees 16 Minutes North Latitude. This belongs to the *Dutch*, who have seven or eight Soldiers here, and five or six Families of *Indians*, who plant Maize, *Guinea* Corn, Yams, and Potatoes, for their Masters; but their chief Employment is the looking after their Goats, of which the *Dutch* salt up great Numbers every Year: They have also some Horses, Cows, and Oxen, upon the Island, and the *Dutch* make Salt in the East End of the Island.

NINE or ten Leagues farther to the Westward, and about as many from the

Continent, lies the Island of *Curassow*, or *Terra Firma*. *Queruaesco*, the most Northerly Point of it in 12 Degrees 40 Minutes North Latitude. There is a good Harbour on the South-East Part of the Island, where the *Dutch* have a considerable Town, defended by a strong Fort. The Country is level, and feeds Abundance of Cattle; they have also some Sugar Farms, and small Plantations of Fruits and Roots, but *Dampier* observes, it is not so much esteemed for its Produce, as its Situation for a Trade with the *Spanish West-Indies*: Formerly the Harbour was never without Ships from *Carthagena* and *Porto-Bello*; the *Spaniards* purchasing 1000 or 1500 Negroes at a Time of them, besides great Quantities of *European* Commodities; but Part of this Trade has of late fallen into the Hands of the *English* and *French*. However, the *Dutch* have still a very extensive Trade in the *Spanish West-Indies*, sending Ships of good Force from *Holland*, freighted with *European* Goods to this Coast, from whence they make very profitable Returns. Let the *Spanish* Governors prohibit this Smuggling Trade never so severely, the *Spaniards* stand so much in Need of *European* Commodities, that they will run any Hazards to deal with the *Dutch*; and as it is their common Interest to connive at this Kind of Traffick, the People are not very hearty in their Endeavours to prevent it.

THE Island of *Aruba*, or *Oraba*, lies seven or eight Leagues to the Westward of *Curassow*, at the Entrance of the Gulph of *Venezuela*, or *Maricaibo*, being about five or six Leagues in Compass. It is a level Country, except only one Hill that rises like a Sugar-Loaf in the Middle of it. This Island also belongs to the *Dutch*, and furnishes *Curassow* with Goats and Sheep; and there are some few Sugar-Plantations in it. These are all the Islands the *Dutch* are Masters of in *America*, except *Saba* and *Eustatia* among the *Caribbees*: Nor have they any Thing upon the Continent, unless *Surinam* in *Guiana*, or *Caribbiana*.

THAT Part of *Terra Firma*, which lies between the Province of *Darien* and the *Terra Firma* subdued.
River

Terra Firma

River *Oronoque*, was subdued by private Adventurers at their own Charges; every one begged a certain Extent of Country of the Court of *Spain*, and used the Natives as they thought fit, ravaging and plundering the several Countries, and murdering or enslaving the miserable Inhabitants, who were able to make but little Resistance to these Tyrants, as the Bishop of *Chiapa* calls them. *Garcia de Lerma* brought the *Indians* of *Santa Martha* under the Spanish Yoke, about the Year 1529. *Ambrose Alfinger* procured a Grant of *Venezuela*, and carried over 800 or 1000 *Germans* thither about the same Time, with whom he harraressed the Country in a terrible Manner for some Hundreds of Miles to the Southwards, spending upwards of three Years in this Expedition.

THE Province of *Carthagena* was begged by Don *Peter de Heredia*, who enslaved the Natives, and settled Spanish Colonies there in the Year 1532.

GONSALO Ximenes de Quesada and *George Federman* the Dutchman, with the rest of the Governors of these three Northern Provinces last mentioned, penetrated far within the Land to the Southward, and subdued that large Province, which now bears the Name of *New Granada*, about the Year 1535.

ALONZO de Herera, and *Anthony Sedory*, made large Discoveries, and planted Colonies in *Guiana*, *Paria*, and *Caribbiana*, now called *New Andalusia*, about the Year 1533. The Province of *Popayan* was discovered and subdued by *Sebastian de Belalcacer*, Governor of *Quito*, in the Year 1536: And if we may credit the Relation of the Bishop of *Chiapa*, whose Business it was to enquire into the Usage of the oppressed *Indians*, the Conduct of all these Adventurers was rather more barbarous than that of *Cortex* in *Mexico*, or of *Pedarias* in *Darien* and *Veragua*.

THOSE who reduced *Santa Martha*, he says, perfectly depopulated a Country which was before crowded with People for the Space of 400 Leagues; nor were they content with barely massacring these miserable People, but so tortured and oppressed those that survived, that they chose

Death rather than live under the Tyranny of these barbarous *Spaniards*.

THEY had carried into Slavery 2000,000 of People from the Coast of *Guiana*, or *New Andalusia*, many of whom perished at Sea for Want of Provisions, and the rest in the Mines; and that in the Pearl Fisheries on this Coast, they destroyed many Thousands more, by compelling them to dive for Pearls beyond their Strength.

IN the Province of *Venezuela* (though the People readily submitted to the Dutch and German Adventurers sent thither, and treated them with all the Goodness and Hospitality imaginable) they destroyed 4,000,000 of Souls and upwards; and most of their Princes and great Men were racked and tortured till they expired, to make them discover the Gold these savage Christians suspected they had concealed.

THAT they sometimes drove the *Indians* into Barns, and threatened them with Death, unless they redeemed themselves with Gold; and when they had procured as much as was required for their Liberties, then they used to imprison them again, and demand as much more; which, if they could not produce, they were shut up sometimes till they were starved; and others were cut to Pieces, or burnt by Hundreds, for not answering the Expectations of their Conquerors, as they called themselves.

FATHER *Bartbolomew de Casas* adds, that those who had been Eye-Witnesses of the Spanish Cruelties in *New Granada*, deposed on their Oaths before the Court of *Spain*, that the *Indian* Caciques or Princes in that Province quietly submitted to the *Spaniards* and *Germans*, with all their People, and were contented to become their Vassals; and the several Lordships and Districts were divided among the Spanish and German Officers and Soldiers, with all the Natives upon them, as their respective Properties: That the *Indians* did not only cultivate the Grounds for their new Masters, and furnished them with Provisions, but presented them with Gold and Precious Stones to a very great Value; which was so far from satisfying their Avarice, that these new Lords proceeded to exercise all

Terra Firma. Manner of Cruelties on the miserable Natives to extort more Gold from them.

THAT the greatest Prince of this Country, named *Bogata*, (from whom the Capital City was afterwards called *Santa Fe de Bogata*) was tortured by the General for several Months, to make him discover his Gold and Emeralds; who, in Hopes of being released from his Tormentors, promised them, at length, to furnish them with a House full of Gold; and dispatching Expresses to every Part of his Dominions, brought in a prodigious Quantity: But the House being not quite filled, he was still racked and tortured to make him produce more; which being impossible, he expired in Torments under the Hands of his merciless Persecutors.

AND as this great Prince had been used by the *Spanish General*, so his Officers and Soldiers used those of an inferior Rank, torturing and burning them to Pieces by Inches to make them discover their Treasures: That it was a common Thing to cut off the Hands and Noses of Men and Women in Sport, and give them to their Dogs: That when the poor Natives fled to the Woods and Mountains to shelter themselves from their Rage, this was called a Rebellion, and they were hunted out by Dogs, torn in Pieces, slaughtered, and thrown from the Tops of the Rocks by Hundreds: And when any of them had secured themselves in inaccessible Places, the *Spaniards* would treacherously offer them their Lives and Liberties, to induce them to surrender, and then cut them in Pieces as soon as they had them in their Power. That it was impossible to describe the Mischiefs and Cruelties of these Monsters of Mankind: And if they were suffered to go on, the Inhabitants must be totally extirpated, and these populous and fertile Countries become a Wilderness (as in Reality it happened not long afterwards for upwards of 600 Leagues.) The Emperor's Commands for redressing these Outrages were very ill observed.

THAT these Adventurers here, as well as those in other Parts of *America*, kept Packs of great Mastiffs on Purpose to hunt and tear in Pieces the *Indians*: It was an

ordinary Thing to kill an *Indian*, without any Offence given them, and to lend a Brother *Spaniard* a Quarter of a Man, as they would lend a Neighbour a Quarter of Pork or Mutton, to feed their Dogs; promising to return it in Kind when they killed a Slave.

THAT others would go out a hunting for *Indians* with their Dogs as they would hunt Wild Beasts, and boast of their having killed twenty or thirty in a Day: Which Facts how monstrous soever, appeared to be true, by the Testimony of Numbers of Witnesses, on the Trials of Causes in the Courts of *Spain*, between the several Adventurers, who frequently fell out about the Limits of their respective Provinces, the Distribution of the Natives, and the rest of their Plunder, and in these Contests, the Truth came out.

HERE I cannot omit relating the Adventures of Captain *Morgan* in this Province of *Terra Firma*, who took the strongest Towns the *Spaniards* possessed in that Part of the World, with a Handful of Men, and defeated the *Spanish* Squadrons of Men of War sent against him, purely by Stratagems, making it appear that he was as well qualified for Command, both by Sea and Land, as any of his Contemporaries.

Captain Morgan's Adventures in Terra Firma.

THIS Gentleman was of a good Family in *Wales*, and about the Year 1652, during *Cromwell's* Usurpation, agreed with the Master of a *Bristol* Ship for his passage to *Barbadoes*, who carried him thither, but treacherously sold his Passenger for a Slave to a Planter in that Island (this Practice of decoying young Fellows on Board by false Representations, of the Wealth that was to be acquired Abroad, and running away with them, being very frequent in those Times.)

MR. *Morgan*, having served seven Years, and obtained his Dismission, went afterwards to the Island of *Jamaica*, where finding two Ships of *Buccaneers* ready to put to Sea, he entered himself on Board one of them, and having met with good Success in cruising upon the *Spaniards*, he and some more of his Companions, at their Return to *Jamaica*, purchased a Ship, of which

Terra Firma. which he was elected Captain, and putting to Sea again, made several rich Prizes, with which he returned to *Jamaica*, where he met with *Mansfelt*, a noted *Dutch* Buccaneer, fitting out Ships to cruize on the *Spanish* Main.

MANSFELT, having heard a great Character of *Morgan*, as to his Courage and Conduct, offered to make him his Vice-Admiral, which our Hero accepted, and they set Sail together from *Jamaica*, with a fleet of sixteen Vessels great and small, on Board whereof were 500 Men, *English*, *French*, and *Dutch*: Their first Expedition was to the Island of *Providence*, or *St. Catherine's*, situate about 40 Leagues North-West of *Porto Bello*, and then in Possession of the *Spaniards*, which they soon made themselves Masters of, though strong by Art and Nature, and left Garrisons in the Forts, designing this Island for a Place of Arms, from whence they proposed to make Descents, and plunder the adjacent Continent.

MANSFELT dying during this Cruise, the Command of the Fleet of Course devolved on his Vice-Admiral *Morgan*, who returning to *Jamaica*, assembled a Fleet of twelve Sail, and 700 brave Seamen, with whom he attacked *Puerto Del Principe*, on the North Coast of the Island of *Cuba*, and took it, where, besides other Plunder, the Buccaneers made themselves Masters of 50,000 Pieces of Eight in Specie; but the *French* and *English* not agreeing, they parted, and *Morgan* returned with the *English* to *Jamaica*.

THE Buccaneers having soon spent their Money on Shore, *Morgan* proposed entering on another Expedition, and was soon joined by near 500 brisk Sailors, though he did not acquaint them whither he designed to carry them. He embarked them on Board nine Sail of Ships and Sloops, and arriving on the Coast of *Terra Firma*, he let his People know that his Design was against *Porto-Bello*, on which some of the Buccaneers observing that their Number was too small to reduce so strong a Fortrefs; *Morgan* replied, If our Number is small our Hearts are great; the fewer we are, the greater will be our Share of the Plun-

der; whereupon they all appeared impatient to enter upon Action, and landing at a Distance from the Town, in the Night-Time, he surprized a *Spanish* Soldier, from whom, having learned the Condition of the Garrison, he surrounded one of the Castles, which defended the Entrance of the Harbour, and ordered the *Spanish* Soldier to call to his Countrymen upon the Walls, and inform them, if they did not immediately surrender, he would give them no Quarter. The Garrison, however, firing upon the Buccaneers, they immediately scaled the Walls, with their Pistols in their Hands; and, after some Resistance, the Seamen entered the Castle at so many different Places, in the Dark, that the Garrison were confounded, and surrendered at Discretion; as did the City itself immediately afterwards; the Governor and principal Townsmen having retired into another Castle, with their Treasure and Effects, and the Plate belonging to the Churches, and firing upon the Buccaneers, *Morgan* ordered all the Friars and Nuns to be assembled, commanding them to march before his Men, and fix the Scaling-Ladders to the Walls; and the Governor of the Castle still continuing to fire, many of the Monks and Nuns were destroyed by their Friends as well as Enemies, crying out for Mercy in vain. At length the Buccaneers mounted the Walls with loaded Pistols and Grenades, the *Spaniards* throwing down their Arms, and crying Quarter: And *Morgan* and his Men continued fifteen Days plundering the Place, and carrying the Treasure on Board, and when he left *Porto-Bello*, obliging the *Spaniards* to advance him 100,000 Pieces of Eight to save their Town from burning; and receiving Advice that the Governor of *Panama* was marching against him with a considerable Force, he possessed himself of a Pass, through which he knew the Enemy must march, and entirely defeated him.

MORGAN, having taken some of the best of the Artillery on board his Ships, and destroyed the rest, after he had furnished himself with Provisions, returned to *Jamaica*, it being computed that the Buccaneers brought back with them 250,000 Pieces

Terra Firma Pieces of Eight, besides a great Deal of other rich Effects; but the Seamen soon consumed every Shilling that came to their Share, and made Money more plentiful in that Island than ever it had been before.

THE Captain, having gained a great Reputation by the *Porto Belto* Expedition, the Seamen crowded to be admitted to serve under him: Having assembled 500 of them, therefore, he sailed to *Tortuga*, a little Island near the Northern Coast of *Cuba*, where he was joined by a great many Seamen more, to the Number of 2000, whom he employed in hunting, and salting up Beef, in the Island of *Hispaniola*, to victual his Fleet; and being now ready to sail, he divided his Fleet, consisting of thirty-seven Ships, into two Squadrons, constituting Vice-Admirals, Rear-Admirals, and other Officers, to whom he gave Commissions to commit Hostilities against the *Spaniards*, declaring them Enemies to the Crown of *England*, and caused Articles to be signed by his Officers, wherein every Man's Share of the Prizes which should be taken was specified, reserving a Hundredth Part of them only to himself.

THEIR first Enterprize was against the Island of *Providence*, which they retook from the *Spaniards* again; and while the Fleet lay here, he sent *Brodley*, his Vice-Admiral, with four Ships, and 400 Men, to take the Castle of *Cbagre*, at the Mouth of the River of that Name, which they fortunately reduced, though it was very obstinately defended. *Morgan*, receiving Advice of the Success of his Squadron at *Cbagre*, followed them with the rest of his Fleet, and leaving a Garrison in the Castle, selected 1200 Men, with whom he marched over the Isthmus towards *Panama*, and the Country being destroyed before him, his Men underwent incredible Hardships, as well for want of Provisions, as from the Badness of the Roads, which lay over Rocks, Mountains and Morasses almost impassable, and at length was obliged to fight his Way through an Army, which the Governor of *Panama* had assembled to oppose him. Ascending a Mountain on the ninth Day, they obtained

a View of the *South-Sea*, and the Bay of *Terra Firma* *Panama*, at which they were so overjoyed, that they seemed to despise all Danger, threw up their Caps, sounded their Drums and Trumpets, and shouted as if they had been already Masters of the City, and encamped, or rather lodged, for they had no Tents with them, in View of the Town, designing to attack the Place the next Morning, but were prevented by the Governor's marching out against them at the Head of four Regiments of Foot, and two Squadrons of Horse, with whom *Morgan* engaged, and within two Hours defeated, when they fled, leaving 600 of their Men dead upon the Field of Battle; and the Loss on the Side of the Buccaneers was very considerable: However, following the Enemy close at the Heels, they scaled the Walls without making any Breach in them, for indeed they had no Artillery, and became Masters of the Place that Day. *Morgan* apprehending that his Men would be so elated with Success, that they would get drunk now they were come into plentiful Quarters, gave out that all the Wine was poisoned, and proceeded to place Guards at all the Avenues to the City to secure his Conquest, when, on a sudden, the whole City appeared in Flames, having been set on Fire in several Places, at the same Instant; which though some of *Morgan's* Enemies charge on him, it is certain he gave Orders for extinguishing it; others suggest that the *Spaniards* fired it themselves, to prevent the rich Treasures laid up there falling into the Hands of the Buccaneers: Nor can it be supposed that *Morgan* should burn the Town before he had possessed himself of the Plunder, and destroy the rich Prize he had obtained with so much Hazard and Difficulty. But, however that was, it is generally agreed that the City continued burning several Days, and very few Houses were left standing. They relate that 2000 of the Houses in which the principal People inhabited, were built with Cedar, and that there were 5000 more of the inferior Tradesmen, with several beautiful Churches and Monasteries in the Place, before this Accident. It

Terra Firma. it being the Magazine of all the Treasures of *Cbili* and *Peru*, which were annually laid up here, in order to be transported to *Europe*.

THE Soldiers afterwards found great Quantities of Plate and Money melted down among the Ruins, and more hid in Wells, or buried, and took 200,000 Pieces of Eight out of a Ship that lay at Anchor in the Harbour.

MORGAN having remained near a Month at *Panama*, and collected the Ransom his Prisoners had agreed to pay, loaded 200 Beasts with the Treasure he had gotten, and returned to *Venta de Cruz*, where he put it into Boats, and sent it down the River *Chagre* to the Castle of that Name: But the Buccaneers of the *French* and *Dutch* Nations murmuring, that there did not more than 200 Pieces of Eight fall to the Share of each private Man, charged their Admiral with concealing the most valuable Part of the Prizes; whereupon the Foreigners left him, and sailed to the Islands of *Tortuga* and *Hispaniola* to join their Countrymen; and *Morgan*, after he had blown up the Castle of *Chagre*, and the Fortifications about it, returned to *Jamaica* with the rest of his Fleet.

THERE is another memorable Expedition of Mr. *Morgan's* in the Year 1669, which deserves also to be recorded. He assembled a Fleet of fifteen Vessels of all Sorts, manned with 960 Men, and appointed them to rendezvous at the Port of *Occa*, a little to the West of *St. Domingo*, in *Hispaniola*, where he was joined by a Ship of thirty-six Guns, sent him by the Governor of *Jamaica*, in which, as he was drinking with his Officers, the Ship blew up, and 350 of his Men perished: But *Morgan*, and his Officers, being in the great Cabin, at a good Distance from the Powder-Room, escaped with their Lives; and though seven of his Fleet were afterwards separated from him by some Accident, he still persisted to prosecute his intended Enterprize, and with eight small Vessels, of which the largest only carried fourteen Guns, stood over to the Continent, and arrived at the Gulph of *Mara-*

VOL. II. N. CIII.

caibo; The Entrance thereof being defended by two Forts, he attacked them, and though the *Spaniards* defended them very bravely, made himself Master of them; and advancing the next Day to the Town of *Maracaibo*, found it abandoned by the *Spaniards*: From thence he sailed to *Gibraltar*, situate on the same Lake, about forty Leagues to the Southward of it, where he met with some Resistance at first; but this also was, in a little Time, abandoned by the *Spaniards*.

MORGAN having remained a Month in Possession of the Town of *Gibraltar*, began his March towards the Mouth of the Lake, taking with him some of the principal *Spanish* Prisoners, as a Security for the Money they had engaged to pay for their Ransom, and being arrived at *Maracaibo*, he received Advice that three large *Spanish* Men of War lay before the Entrance of the Lake to cut off his Retreat; at which he was so far from being discouraged, that he sent to Don *Alonzo del Campa*, to demand a great Sum of Money to redeem *Maracaibo* from the Flames; to which Don *Alonzo* answered, that he should dispute his Passage out of the Lake, and pursue his Piratical Fleet till he had destroyed them, if he did not surrender the Plunder, with the Prisoners he had taken; but if he did, he might pass without Molestation: Whereupon *Morgan* assembled his Men in the Market-Place of *Maracaibo*, and demanded if they chose to surrender their Plunder, or fight their Way through the Enemy; and they all answered, They would spend the last Drop of their Blood in Defence of their Booty; and having fitted up a large Ship, they had taken in the Gulph, for a Fire-Ship, and disguised her like a Man of War, they arrived at the Entrance of the Lake, and came to an Anchor, in Sight of the Enemy, on the 30th of *April* in the Evening, and the next Morning stood directly towards the Enemy, with the Fire-Ship at the Head of his little Fleet. The *Spanish* Commander, Don *Alonzo*, looking on this as the Ship of the greatest Force, prepared to engage her: But was, on a sudden, grappled

Terra Firma. grappled by the Fire Ship, his Ship burnt, and most of his Men perished, though he escaped to Shore himself; the Captain of another of the Ships run her a-ground, and set Fire to her himself; and the third was taken by the Buccaneers.

MORGAN, having obtained this Victory, landed and attacked the Castle, which defended the Streight he was obliged to pass, before he could get out of the Gulph; but Don *Alonzo* having thrown himself into the Castle, with a body of Troops, fired on the Buccaneers so briskly, that they were obliged to return to their Ships, having lost a great many Men before the Walls of the Castle.

MORGAN, hereupon, let Don *Alonzo* know, that he would hang up all his Prisoners, if he opposed his Passage out of the Lake; but the Don however brought so many of his Guns to fire on the Streight, that the Passage seemed impracticable: Whereupon *Morgan* landed most of his Men, and made a Feint, as if he would attack the Castle a second Time; which induced the Governor to remove most of his Great Guns to the Land-Side, and place most of the Garrison there: But as soon as it was dark, *Morgan* privately re-embarked his Troops, and letting the Ships fall down with the Tide, passed by the Castle before he was perceived; and then spreading his Sails, got out of the Reach of the Guns in an Instant. The Buccaneers arrived soon after at *Jamaica* with their Plunder, consisting of 250,000 Pieces of Eight and a vast Quantity of rich Merchandize.

KING *Charles II.* in Consideration of so many important Services done by Mr. *Morgan*, was pleased to Knight him: He was made one of the Commissioners of the Admiralty for the Island of *Jamaica*; and when the Earl of *Carlisle*, the Governor, came to *England*, for the Recovery of his Health, in the Year 1680, he left Sir *Henry Morgan* his Deputy Governor there: However, the *Spaniards* making repeated Complaints, by their Ambassadors, of the Depredations of the Buccaneers, Sir *Henry* was sent for to *England*, and committed to the

Tower, where he remained three Years, *Terra Firma.* but, at length, obtained his Liberty, and returned to *Jamaica*, but did not long survive his Imprisonment.

It may seem strange, that the Court of *England* should encourage, or even connive at the Depredations of the Buccaneers in *Spanish America*, when *England* and *Spain* were at Peace in *Europe*: But nothing is more usual than for the Nations of *Europe* to commit Acts of Hostility against each other in their distant Settlements in the *East* and *West-Indies*, while they are at Peace in *Europe*.

THE *Spaniards* having obtained a Grant from the Pope of all Countries West of the *Atlantick* Ocean, imagined they had an exclusive Right to them, and sunk all Ships that appeared on the *American* Coast for some Time; but other Nations would by no means tamely submit to that Bull, or Decree of the Pope's, but planted great Part of the Continent and Islands, which the *Spaniards* looked upon as their Property; and as the *Spaniards* did not cease to disturb those Settlements, take their Shipping, and massacre their Men, though the *English* did not declare open War against *Spain* in *Europe*, yet she suffered private Adventurers, denominated *Buccaneers*, to retaliate those Hostilities of the *Spaniards*, in order to bring them to Reason, and cease to disturb our Merchants in their Traffick to our own Plantations in *America*.

SIR *Henry Morgan*, and his People, therefore, could not be denominated Pirates for attacking a Parcel of Usurpers, who had no Manner of Right to the Country they possessed, but oppressed and tyrannized over the Natives, prohibiting their trafficking with any other Nation; and it was the asserting of theirs and our undoubted Right of corresponding and trading with each other, that the *Spaniards* were pleased to denominate Piracy, though *Morgan* was countenanced and supported in those Expeditions by the Government of *England*, which alone is sufficient to clear him of the Charge of Piracy. Sir *Harry* was, indeed, afterwards, at the Instance of
the

Terra Firma. the *Spanish* Ambassador sent to the *Tower*, but was afterwards set at Liberty, and never brought to a Trial. He performed the greatest Actions that ever any General

did, with so small a Force, and well de- *Terra Firma.* served to have had a Statue erected to his Memory.

P E R U.

P E R U.
Name.

THIS Country does not seem to have been known by any general Name, when the *Spaniards*, arrived here; but the Discoverers meeting one of the Natives on the Coast, and demanding what Country it was, the *Indian* answered, *Peru*, or *Beru*, that is, *What do you say?* The *Spaniards* apprehending he understood them right, concluded *Peru* was the Name of the Country, and it is to this Day called *Peru*.

Situation.

It extends along the West Coast of *South-America* from the River *Passao*, or the *Azure River*, under the Equator, to the Province of *Arauco* (now Part of *Chili*) in 40 Degrees of South Latitude, the Eastern Limits being the *Cordelera's* or Mountains of the *Andes*; and as the Land runs from the North-West to the South-East, *Peru* consequently is near 2000 Miles long, and about 200 broad, except in the South, where it is near 500 Miles broad. It is usually divided into three Branches, 1. The *Lanos*, or Sandy Plains, which lie along the Coast. 2. The *Sierras*, or Hills, situate a little further within Land; and, 3dly, the Mountains of the *Andes* beyond both, esteemed the highest Land in the World. It never rains on the West Side of the Mountains called the *Sierras*, unless within 2 or 3 Degrees of the Equinoctial. The *Andes* and *Sierras* run parallel to each other, at least 1000 Leagues. Nor are the *Lanos*, which lie between the *Sierras* and the Sea-Shore, Low Land, *Peru* has generally a high bold Shore. Beyond the Capital City of *Cusco*, which lies in 14 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, the two Ridges of Mountains, viz. the *Andes* and *Sierras*, separate to a greater Distance, encircling a fruitful Plain of a vast

Division and
Face of the
Country.

Extent, watered by many Rivers, and by the great Lake *Titicaca*, which is eighty Leagues in Circumference, into which most of the Rivers fall. The *Lanos*, or Sandy Plains, near the Sea, are most of them barren Deserts, except some Vallies, into which the Husbandmen turn their R-
vulets, and water their Vineyards, Corn-Fields, and Pasture-Grounds; for without Water, scarce any Thing will grow here. The Air, on the *Sierras*, is most temperate, and consequently that Part of the Country is best inhabited; on the *Lanos* it is excessive hot; and the *Andes* are cold barren Mountains, almost always covered with Snow.

ACOSTA, in describing the Height of the *Andes*, and of the Disorders the Air occasioned in all that passed them, says, he once resolved to make the Experiment himself, and mounted one of the highest Tops of these Hills, called *Pariacaca*; that he went prepared for the Adventure, according to the best Instructions he could get, with several more who had the like Curiosity; but notwithstanding all his Precaution, when he came to mount the Stairs, or Ladders, near the Top, he was seized with such Pains, that he thought he should have fallen to the Ground; and the rest of the Company being under the like Disorder they all made Haste to get down the Mountain as fast as they could, none staying for his Companion: And they were all taken with such Reachings to vomit, that he thought they should have brought up their Hearts; for not only green Phlegm and Choler came up, but a great deal of Blood; and that this lasted for three or four Hours, till they had descended to the lower Part of the Hill; and some of them purged

The vast
Height of
the *Andes*.

P E R U. purged violently. But generally, this Sickness goes off as they come down the Hill, and is attended with no ill Consequences.

AND not only this Passage of *Pariacaca* has these Properties, but the whole Ridge of Mountains called the *Andes*, for upwards of 500 Leagues; in what Place soever People pass it, they meet with strange Disorders, but more in some Parts than others; and those are more sensible of the ill Effects, who ascend from the Sea, than those that ascend from the neighbouring Plains; for he had passed the *Andes* in four other different Places, and always felt the like Disorder, but not so violently as at *Pariacaca*; and the best Remedy they found against it, was to stop their Mouths, Noses, and Ears, as much as possible, and to cover their Breast; for the Air was so subtle and piercing, that it penetrated the Entrails, not only of Men but Beasts; and he had known Horses so affected by it, that no Spurs could make them move. And such is the Height of the *Andes*, that the *Pyrennees* and the *Alps* were but ordinary Hills, in Comparison of them; from whence he concluded, that the Air here was too pure for Animals to breathe in (they requiring a grosser Medium) and this he supposed occasioned that Disorder in the Stomach.

HE observed farther, that the high Mountains he had passed in *Europe*, were only excessive cold, and made him clothe himself the warmer when he passed them; but the Stomach and Appetite for Meat was still stronger, and they had no Reaching to vomit there, as here; the outward Parts only were affected. On the contrary, on the *Andes*, they were not affected with Cold at the Time of the Year they passed them, either in their Hands, or Feet, or any Part of their Bodies; only their Entrails were affected, and that most, when the Sun was hottest; which confirmed him in the Opinion, that the Disorder proceeded from the Purity and Subtlety of the Air.

THE Sea, which borders on *Peru*, is the *Pacifick* Ocean, so denominated from the constant serene Weather the Natives enjoy on Shore, and within 400 or 500

*Pacifick
Ocean.*

Miles of the Coast, between 4 and 35 Degrees of South Latitude. Here is no Rain or dark Clouds, as *Dampier* observed, tho' it is often so thick and hazy, as to hinder an Observation of the Sun with a Quadrant, and, in the Morning, there is hazy Weather frequently, and thick Mists that Season. wet a little; but there are not in this Sea, says the same Writer, any Tempests, Tornadoes, or Hurricanes; though North of the Equator, they are met with in this Sea, as well as in the *Atlantick* Ocean. This *Pacifick* Sea, however, at the New and Full Moon, swells and runs with high long Surges, or Waves, but such as never break at Sea, and so are safe enough. On the contrary, where they fall in and break upon the Shore, they make it very dangerous Landing. At *Guiaquil*, on the *Peruvian* Coast, situated in 3 Degrees South Latitude, the Tide runs very strong, and rises sixteen or eighteen Feet perpendicular; but does not rise so high on any Part of the Coast to the Southward, where there are not such Bays, or so many Rivers, as there are here; for the Tides always run strongest, and the highest, in Gulphs or Bays of the Sea, and up the Mouths of Rivers. *Funnel* observes, that the Winds in the *Peruvian* Seas, and on all the Western Side of *America*, from 38 Degrees South to 7 Degrees North, are always Southerly two Points, upon the Shore, so that where the Coast runs due North and South, the Wind is at South South-West; and where the Coast runs South South-East the Wind is due South (except it be in the Night, when the Sea-Wind generally ceases, and there comes a fine moderate Gale from the Land, which they call the Land Breeze; but *Dampier* observes, that on Promontories and Headlands, and such Places as lie open to the Sea, they have scarce any of these Land Breezes, it being in Bays and Creeks chiefly that they had the Advantage of Land Breezes.)

DAMPIER also observes, that the Southerly Winds, on the Coast of *Peru*, continue to blow 140 or 150 Leagues from the Shore, before they alter, but then they may be perceived to come about more

Easterly

PERU. Easterly, and about 200 Leagues to the Westward of that Shore, the true Trade-Wind sets in at East South-East, which never alters till they have passed the *Pacifick* Ocean, and arrive at the *East-Indies*.

BUT both *Dampier* and *Funnel* relate, that at *Arica*, which lies on the Coast of *Peru*, in 18 Degrees odd Minutes, South Latitude, for near 100 Leagues to the Southward, this Sea is very subject to Calms, within 35 or 40 Leagues of the Shore; but that these Calms are not usual on any other Part of this Coast. It is observed also, that when the Sun is in the Northern Signs, namely, from *March* to *September*, the Sky is generally bright and clear; but when the Sun returns back to the Southern Signs, then the Weather is frequently so thick and hazy, that they cannot take an Observation though they have no Rain even then, either at Sea or on the Coast. As to the Weather on Shore, it is various, according to the Situation of the Land; the *Lanos*, or Sandy Plains by the Sea-Side, never have a Drop of Rain upon them; but frequently thick Mists rise here. On the *Sierras*, or Hills beyond, the Rains fall when the Sun is in the Southern Signs, as they do in other Countries that lie between the Equator and the Tropick of *Capricorn*. And on the *Cordeleras* or *Andes*, the high Mountains that are situated farthest from the Sea, it rains or snows two Thirds of the Year, and is excessive cold; and as the Vallies between the Hills called *Sierras*, are the most fruitful Parts of the Country, their Season for planting and sowing there, is at the Beginning of the Rains, and their Harvest at the return of the dry Weather. Their Vintage also is in the fair Season, and their Vines thrive best in those Vallies near the Sea, where there is little or no Rain, and which are watered with Rivulets that fall from the Hills; but most Part of the *Lanos*, or Sandy Plains by the Sea-Side, are barren Desarts, bearing neither Trees nor Herbs, and are very little inhabited, except some few Port-Towns, situated at the Mouths of Rivers.

THE chief Rivers which rise on the West Side of the Mountains of *Andes*,

and falls into the *Pacifick* Ocean, mentioned by the *Buccaneers*, who have visited that Coast, are, 1. The River of *Colanche*, in 2 Degrees South Latitude. 2. The River of *Guiquil*, in 3 Degrees. 3. The River *Payta*, in 5 Degrees 15 Minutes. 4. The River *Ylo*, which discharges itself into the Sea, in 18 Degrees; and, 5. The River of *Arica*, which falls into the same Sea, near the Town of *Arica*, in 18 Degrees; besides which, there are a great many other small Rivers that fall into the Sea, within 18 or 20 Degrees of South Latitude; but farther Southward, *Dampier* informs us, they did not meet with a River on the Coast of *Peru* or *Chili*, once in 100 or 150 Leagues.

PERU is divided into three Audiences, ^{Provinces.} viz. 1. The Audience of *Quito*. 2. The Audience of *Lima*; and, 3. The Audience of *Los Charcos*.

THE Audience of *Quito*, the most ^{Quito.} Northerly of the three, is bounded by *Po-payan* on the North, by the Country of the *Amazons* on the East, by the Audience of *Lima* on the South, and by the *Pacifick* Ocean on the West; being about 400 Miles in Length, from North to South, and 200 in Breadth from East to West.

THE chief Towns of *Quito Proper*, are 1. *Quito*. 2. *St. Jago de Puerto Viejo*. 3. *Guiquil*. 4. *Tombes*. 5. *Thomebambay*. 6. *Loxa*. 7. *Zamora*. 8. *St. Michael's*; and, 9. *Payta*.

THE City of *Quito*, the Capital of this Province, and of the whole Audience, is situated, in 30 Minutes South Latitude, and in 78 Degrees Western Longitude, at the Foot of the Mountains, which almost surround it. It is a rich populous City, built after the *Spanish* Model, with a great Square in the Middle, and spacious Streets running from it on every Side; and a Canal runs through the Middle of it, over which are several Bridges. It is the Seat of the Governor, and of the Courts of Justice, a University, and a Bishop's See, Suffragan to the Archbishop of *Lima*. They have a good Trade in Woolen Cloths, Sugar, Salt, and Cattle; but their greatest Riches proceed from the Gold that

PERU. is found in Rivers: This, as all other Countries near the Equator, is subject to annual periodical Rains and Floods, which make the Town unhealthful. The *Peruvian* Emperor had made a Conquest of *Quito*, which was the Residence of the former Kings of this Country, but a very few Years before the *Spaniards* arrived there; and there are still to be seen the Ruins of some of their Palaces, and of the Temple of the Sun, the chief Object of their Adoration.

THERE is a Vulcano in one of the Mountains near the Town, whose Eruptions have more than once endangered the Ruin of it.

Lima.

THE Audience of *Lima*, or *Los Reyes*, is bounded by that of *Quito* on the North, by the Country of the *Amazons* on the East, by the Audience of *Los Charcas* on the South, and by the Ocean on the West; being about 800 Miles in Length from North to South, but the Breadth very unequal and uncertain, not 400 Miles broad in any Part, except on the South.

THE chief Towns are, 1. *Lima*. 2. *Caxamalca*. 3. *Guanuco*. 4. *Truxillo*. 5. *Pisca*. 6. *Guamanga*. 7. *Cusco*; and, 8. *Arequipa*.

Lima City.

LIMA, the Capital of this Audience, and of the whole Kingdom of *Peru*, is situated in 12 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and 76 Degrees of Western Longitude, on the Banks of a River of the same Name, about six Miles from the Sea, and as many from the Island and Port of *Callao*, lying in one of the most spacious and fruitful Plains of *Peru*. It is built like other *Spanish* Cities, having a large Square or Area in the Centre, with Piazzas on every Side, all the principal Streets terminating in the Square; on the sides whereof stand the Cathedral, the Archbishop's Palace, the Viceroy's Palace, the Treasury, the Town-Hall, the Armory, or publick Magazine, and a School or College of the *Jesuits*, where the *Indian* Languages, and Arts and Sciences, are taught.

THERE are, besides the Cathedral, a great many Parochial and Conventual Churches, a University, Abundance of Monasteries and Nunneries of every Order, and five or six

large Hospitals: The whole City being about four Miles in Length, and two in Breadth; the Air moderately healthful, considering the Climate; prodigiously wealthy, and plentifully supplied with Provisions, and *Indian* and *European* Fruits, and well watered with Canals, that are supplied from the River. The Outsides of the Houses make but a mean appearance, being built with Bricks dried in the Sun; many of them have only Clay Walls, and scarce any of them are more than one Story high; the Roofs exceeding light, covered with Reeds and Mats, and sometimes only a Cloth, for which they give two very good Reasons; one is, that they are subject to Earthquakes; and the other, that the Sun does not heat these Roofs as it does Tiles or Slate: And they have no Occasion to provide against wet or stormy Weather, for it never rains on this Coast, and they are never disturbed by Storms or Tempests, but enjoy constant serene Weather; and the Heats are much abated by Sea and land Breezes. But this great City, thus happily situated, is not without its Allays. The Earthquakes they are frequently subject to, must necessarily cast a Damp on all their Enjoyments, especially when great Part of the Town has been several Times laid in Ruins by them, particularly in the Years 1586 and 1687; in the last of which Years the Sea ebbed so far from the Shore, that there was no Water to be seen; and after the Sea had disappeared a considerable Time, it returned in rowling Mountains of Water, which carried the Ships in the Harbour of *Callao*, the Port of *Lima*, a League up into the Country, overflowed the Town of *Callao*, tho' situated on a Hill, together with the Forts, and drowned both Men and Cattle for fifty Leagues along the Shore. The Ships 150 Leagues at Sea, to the Westward of *Lima*, were sensible of it, as *Waser* assures us, who was then in those Seas: The Ship he was in felt so violent a Shock, he relates, that they thought they had struck upon a Rock; but after their Consternation was a little over, they cast the Lead and sounded, but could find no Ground; though the Sea, which usually looks green, was then of a whitish Colour, and the Water they took

PERU.

Earthquakes.

PERU. up mixed with Sand; which made them conclude the Shock was occasioned by an Earthquake; and a little after they were informed there had been a terrible Earthquake at *Lima*, at the same Time. Another Earthquake happened at *Lima* on the Seventeenth of *October*, 1746, between Ten and Eleven at Night, by which seventy-four Churches, fourteen Monasteries, fifteen Hospitals, several magnificent Palaces, and upwards of 1000 private Houses were destroyed, and 1500 People perished in the Ruins, with a prodigious Treasure, which lay ready to be sent to *Europe*; and, at the same Time, *Callao*, the Port Town to *Lima*, about five or six Miles distant from it, was swallowed up by the Sea, and a great many Ships in the Harbour were carried some Leagues over the dry Land; nothing was to be seen of this fine Port, where 6000 or 7000 People were swallowed up by the Sea; 200 of the Inhabitants only escaped.

Cusco City. CUSCO (the Metropolis of *Peru*, during the Reigns of the Incas) is situated in 13 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and in 70 Degrees Western Longitude, 350 Miles to the Eastward of *Lima*. It is built on the Side of a Hill, in the Midst of a spacious Plain, surrounded by Mountains, from whence there fall four small Rivers, that water the Country, and all together afford a most agreeable Prospect from the Town, which proudly overlooks the Vale. The City itself also is watered by one of these Rivers that runs through it, and supplies several Canals that are cut through the principal Streets.

THE Climate here is exceeding temperate and healthful, very little Difference between Summer and Winter, the Air rather dry than moist, insomuch that Meat hung up will keep without corrupting, and grow as dry as Mummy, if it hangs long; and this Driness of the Air preserves the Natives from Musketo, Gnats, Flies, and all other noxious Insects which are scarce ever found here, though they are the Plague of other hot Countries.

THE chief Streets of the old Town pointed to the four Winds; and the Houses were generally built with Stone, covered

with Reeds, or thatched. The principal Buildings in it were, the Temple of the Sun, the Palace of the Inca, and the Castle.

WHAT the Form and Dimensions of the Temple of the Sun were, neither *De-la-Vega*, or any other Writer, pretend to describe; but relate, that amongst all their Buildings none was comparable to this Temple: That it was enriched with the greatest Treasures that ever the World beheld. Every one of their Incas, or Emperors, adding something to it, and improving and perfecting what his Predecessor had omitted.

It was built of Freestone, and lined or wainscotted (if I may use the Expression) with Gold Plate, the Ceiling being of the same Metal; however, the Roof was no better than common Thatch, that People not knowing the Use of Tiles or Slate: It was divided into several Chapels, Cloisters and Apartments, in the principal whereof, which stood towards the East, was placed the Image of the Sun, consisting of one Gold Plate, that covered the whole Breadth of the Chapel, almost from the top to the Bottom, and was twice as thick as the Plates that covered the other Walls.

THIS Image, representing the Sun, was of a round Form, with all his Rays and Emissions of Fire and Light proceeding from him, much in the same Manner as the *European* Painters draw him: On each Side of this Image were placed the several Bodies of the deceased Incas, so embalmed, it is said, that they seemed to be alive. These were seated on Thrones of Gold, supported by Pedestals of the same Metal, all of them looking to the West, except the Inca *Huana Capac*, the eldest of the Sun's Children, who sat directly opposite to it. Upon the Arrival of the *Spaniards*, the *Indians* carried off, and concealed these embalmed Bodies, with most of the Treasure of the Temple; only the Image of the Sun was not removed, which falling to the Share of a *Spanish* Nobleman, named *Macio Serra de Lequicano*, known to our Author *De-la-Vega*, he played it away before Sun-rise the next Morning. The Temple

PERU. Temple had several Gates covered with Gold, the principal whereof opened towards the North, and round the Top of the Temple, on the Out-side, was a Kind of Cornice, a Yard deep, consisting of Gold Plate.

BESIDES the Chapel of the Sun, there were five others of a pyramidal Form. The first being dedicated to the Moon, deemed the Sister and Wife of the Sun, the Doors and Walls whereof were covered with Silver: And here was the Image of the Moon, of a round Form, with a Woman's Face in the Middle of it. She was called *Mama Quilca*, or Mother Moon, being esteemed the Mother of their Incas; but no Sacrifices were offered to her as to the Sun. On each Side of this Image, were placed the Bodies of their deceased Empresses, ranged in Order, only that of *Mama Oello*, the Mother of *Huana Capac*, sat with her Face towards the Moon.

NEXT to this Chapel was that of *Venus*, called *Chasca*, the *Pleiades*, and all the other Stars. *Venus* was much esteemed, as an Attendant on the Sun, and the rest were deemed Maids of Honour to the Moon. This Chapel had its Walls and Doors plated with Silver.

THE third Chapel was dedicated to Thunder and Lightning, which they did not esteem Gods, but as Servants of the Sun; and they were not represented by any Image or Picture. This Chapel, however, was ceiled and wainscotted with Gold Plates, like that of the Sun.

ANOTHER was dedicated to *Iris*, or the Rainbow, as owing its Original to the Sun. This also was covered with Gold, and a Representation of the Rainbow on one Side of it. They had a great Veneration for this Phenomenon, and whenever it appeared in the Air, clapped their Hands before their Mouths, as a Testimony of their Regard for it, I presume; and not, as my Author surmises, lest their Teeth should drop out.

THE fifth was for the use of the High-Priests, and the rest of the Priests who were of the Royal Blood; not intended for eating or sleeping in, but was the Place where they gave Audience to the Sun's Vo-

PERU. taries, and consulted concerning their Sacrifices: This also was adorned with Gold, from the Top to the Bottom, like the Chapel of the Sun.

AND though there was no other Image worshipped in this Temple but that of the Sun, yet had they the Figures of Men, Women and Children, and of all Manner of Birds, Beasts, and other Animals, of wrought Gold, placed in it for Ornament, as big as the Life; and having many more than were sufficient for this Purpose, the rest were laid up in Chambers and Magazines, piled one upon another; and still every Year, the People at their great Festivals, presented more Gold and Silver, which the Goldsmiths, who resided near the Temple, and were dedicated to the Sun, formed into one Figure or other, as the Offerer desired; for besides the Figures of Animals, they made all Sorts of Vessels and Utensils, as Pots, Pans, Bowls, Fire-Shovels, and even Spades and Rakes for their Gardens, of the same precious Metal.

DE-LA-VEGA does not give so particular a Description of the Palaces of the Incas in *Cusco*, as could be wished. He only relates they were vastly large and magnificent, and mentions some particular Rooms, and the Manner of their building them: He says, there were Galleries, or rather Halls, 200 Paces in Length, and fifty or sixty in Breadth, one of which, in his Time, was left undemolished, and converted into the Cathedral Church. He adds, that the *Indians of Peru* never raised one Story above another in their Buildings, nor did they join one Room to another, but always left some Space between the Rooms, and, perhaps, a whole Court or Quadrangle; unless sometimes, in the largest Halls, they built Closets, or Withdrawing-Rooms, at the Corners.

WHEN an Inca died, they shut up the Room where he usually slept, with all the Furniture, Ornaments, Gold and Silver in it, and none were ever suffered to enter it afterwards, the Place being looked upon as sacred; but they kept it in Repair on the Outside as long as it would stand. The like Ceremony was observed as to all other

rooms

PERU. Rooms where the deceased Incas slept though it was but one Night, in a Journey, or by Accident: Therefore, on the Death of the Inca, they immediately fell to build a new Apartment for the Successor. The Stones of these Buildings were generally so well laid and joined, it is said, that they needed no Cement, and if any were used, it was a slimy Liquor like Cream, which so united and closed the Stone, that no Seam or Crevice appeared: And in many of the Royal Palaces and Temples, for the greater Magnificence, says *Pedro de Sieca*, they closed up the Seams of their Buildings with melted Gold and Silver; which afterwards occasioned the total Destruction of most of them, the *Spaniards* subverting the very Foundations, in Hopes of finding Treasure. The Furniture, or rather Ornaments of these Palaces, like that of their Temples, were the Figures of Men, Beasts, Birds, and other Animals cast in Gold; and on the Walls, instead of Tapestry, were Plants and Flowers of the same Metal, interspersed with Serpents, Butterflies, and other Insects, that appeared extremely natural.

I do not find they had any Chairs; but the Inca himself sat on a Stool made of Gold, without Arms or Back, having a Pedestal of the same Metal; and they had no other Bedding but Carpets made of the Wool of their Country Sheep spread on the Floor; which served both to lie on, and cover themselves with; and in some Part of the Country they lay in Hammocks.

THEY had Bagnios and Cisterns of Gold, also, in their Palaces; and all the Utensils of their Kitchens, and the meanest Offices about the Palace, were of that Metal; inasmuch that *Pedro de Sieca* avers, that if all the Treasures in their Temples and Palaces, which were then lost, should be recovered, they would be found so great, that all the Riches the *Spaniards* had possessed themselves of, would be no more in comparison of them, than a Drop of Water to a Bushel. However, the *Indians* neither purchased Lands or Houses with it, or esteemed it the Sinews of

PERU. War, as the *Europeans* do; but only adorned themselves, their Houses, and Temples with it while alive, and buried it with them when they died. And the *Indians* observing how the *Spaniards* thirsted after Gold, and transported into *Spain* all they could seize or lay their Hands on, buried and concealed whatever they could from them.

DE-LA-VEGA also informs us, that the Royal Gardens of the Palace were not only planted with a great Variety of Trees, Fruits, and Flowers; but the Figures of these, and all Manner of Animals, were made of Gold, and placed in the Walks and Squares to adorn them.

THE same Writer, speaking of the Castle of *Cusco*, says, its Works are incredible to those who have not seen it; and those that have, are apt to look upon it as erected by Enchantment, seeming to surpass the Art or Power of Man. This Fortress stood upon the Top of the Hill on which the City was built, and towards the Town was defended by a high Rock perfectly perpendicular; so that there was no approaching it on this Side; and towards the Country, it was defended by tripple semicircular Walls of such Thickness and Height, that they were proof against all the Force that could be brought against it, the innermost Wall rising above and commanding the other two. The Stones of these Walls were so very large, especially the three first Rounds, that they appeared to be entire Rocks; and it was past Man's Understanding to conceive how they were hewn out of the Quarry, or brought thither, the *Indians* having no Iron Tools, or Instruments to fasten them, or Beasts to draw them thither; or any Pullies or Engines to lift them into the Places where they were fixed; such was their Bulk and Weight, that they must have broken down any Carriages they could be laid upon.

ACOSTA relates, that he measured a Stone in the Walls of an *Indian* Castle, that was thirty-eight Feet long, eighteen broad, and six in Thickness; and yet the Stones in the Fortress of *Cusco*, were still

larger;

P E R U. larger; and these were dragged by the Strength of Men, ten, twelve, and fifteen Leagues over Hills and Vallies, and the most difficult Ways, to that Place. There is one Stone to which the *Indians* give the Name of *Syacusa*, that is, the Tired or Weary; because it never arrived at the Place it was designed for, but remains still on the Road.

THIS Rock was drawn by 20,000 *Indians* fifteen Leagues, over very rugged, and uneven Ways; one Half of them drew before, the rest came after it, and on each side to poise its Weight, and keep it in a direct Course, lest it should fall into a Precipice, or be wedged into any Place from whence it could not be recovered; but notwithstanding all their Care, it got the better of them; and tumbling down a steep Hill, killed several Hundreds of the *Indians*, who were endeavouring to poise the Weight. However, they raised it once again, and with incredible Pains dragged it to the Plain in the Neighbourhood of *Cusco*, and there they were forced to leave it, never being able to get it up the Hill: Here, according to their Way of Expression, it tired, fainted, and wept, and was able to travel no further, but bled with the Fatigue and Labour it underwent in the Passage. Which the Reader will have the Sagacity to discern, no Doubt, is to be applied to the poor Wretches, who drew it, and perished in the Enterprize; and seems to me to resemble another Expression, that has been frequently made Use of in this Part of the World, where Abundance of People have been destroyed by the Labour and Hardships imposed on them by tyrannical Princes, in erecting Cities and magnificent Works, to eternize their Memories. In these Cases, it is frequently said, that the Walls or Foundations were laid in Blood, or cemented with the Blood of so many Thousand Men. Which metaphorical Expressions have, indeed, by some unthinking Readers, been interpreted literally, or rejected as fabulous when a very moderate Share of Reflection might have set them right.

EVERY Nation of this extensive Empire, had Quarters assigned for their Resi-

dence in the Royal City of *Cusco*. The **P E R U.** Vassal Princes of every Province, and especially the Caracas, or conquered Princes, were obliged to send their eldest Sons to Court, and build them a Palace, about which all the Natives of the same Province, residing in *Cusco*, had their Houses, and every People were obliged to retain the Habits of their respective Provinces, being chiefly distinguished by their Head-Dresses.

THESE Institutions added to the Splendor of the Inca's Court. The Sons of the Caracas, or Vassal Princes, being obliged to wait at the Inca's Palace, in their Turn, contributed much to the Security of the Government; these young Lords remaining, in a Manner, Pledges of their Father's Loyalty; though the Reasons usually given for their Attendance were, that they might be the better educated and instructed in the Laws of the Empire, and prepared for Posts in the Administration: But whatever was the Reason of the Institution, by this Means the Court-Language, and the Manners and Customs of the Capital City were communicated to the most distant Provinces; and the Court, on the other Hand, were justly informed of the State of their remotest Territories.

THE Modern City of *Cusco*, built by the *Spaniards*, consists of large Squares with their Piazzas; from whence the principal Streets, which are very long and broad, run in direct Lines; and these again are crossed by other Streets at Right Angles; and as it is divided into the Upper and Lower Town by the River, which runs through it, they have built several arched Stone-Bridges on the River, for the more easy Communication of one Part of the Town with the other.

BESIDES the Cathedral, there are several Parochial and Conventual Churches, Monasteries, and Nunneries of every Order and some noble Hospitals, as well for *Indians* as *Spaniards*. And it must be said, for the Honour of the *Spaniards*, that none take more Care of their Hospitals, and of sick and infirm People than they do in every Part of the World. The Bishop of *Cusco* is Suffragan to the Archbishop

P E R U. Archbishop of *Lima*, which the *Spaniards* have thought fit, since their Conquest, to make the Capital of *Peru*. I shall only add, that the Gentlemen and Citizens of *Cusco* (as the *Indians* had formerly) have most of them their Country Houses in the pleasant and healthful Valley of *Yuca*, thro which there runs a fine River, that makes it one of the most fruitful Valleys in *Peru*, and is now planted with almost all Manner of *Indian* and *European* Corn and Fruits.

Los Charcas.

LOS CHARCAS, the third Audience, is bounded by the Audience of *Lima* on the North, by the Province of *Paraguay*, or *La Plata*, on the East, by *Chili* on the South, and by the *Pacifick* Ocean on the West, being about 700 Miles in Length from East to West, in the broadest Part, and about the same Breadth from North to South. The chief Towns in this Audience are, 1. *Potosi*. 2. *Porco*. 3. *La Plata*. 4. *Santa Cruz*. 5. *La Paz*. 6. *Chinquita*. 7. *Tiagunaco*. 8. *Arica*; and, 9. *Hillo*, or *Ylo*.

Potosi Silver Mine.

POTOSI, which takes its Name from the Mountain at the Bottom of which it stands, is situated in 22 Degrees South Latitude, 67 Degrees West of *London*, in one of the most barren Countries of *America*, there being neither Trees nor Grass to be found near it, but the richest Silver Mines that ever were discovered, which has brought Multitudes of People hither, inso-much that it is said to be one of the largest and most populous Towns of *Peru*; nor is it ill supplied with Provisions, all the Countries roundabout, for 30 or 40 Leagues, carrying the Produce of their several Countries to their Markets, where they are sure to be well paid for what they bring. As to the Mines, which have rendered this Town famous though the World, there are several Thousand People constantly employed in digging and refining the Silver. So diligent have the *Spaniards* been since they discovered this Mountain of Silver, that, though it be 3 or 4 Leagues in Circumference, and 1624 Rods (I presume it should be Yards) high, it is now little more than a Crust or Shell, out of which they have taken most of the internal Riches, and are daily in search of new Mines.

The *Spaniards* have erected a Chapel on the Top of the Hill, to which they ascend by a narrow winding Path; but the Mountain is so exceeding cold, that it is scarce habitable, possibly the Chapel, therefore, was erected more for Ostentation than Devotion. There are also a great Number of Churches, Chapels and Convents in the Town; for however the Religious seem to have renounced the World, it is observed, they are usually most numerous where Silver most abounds.

PORCO is situated ten Leagues North-West of *Potosi*, considerable on Account of its Silver Mines, before those of *Potosi* were discovered; but the latter being richer, and not so much incommoded by Water, *Porco* was in a Manner deserted.

LA PLATA, Capital of the *Pro-* *La Plata City.* vince, received its Name from the Silver Mine in the Neighbourhood, which were the first the *Spaniards* wrought. It is situated on one of the Sources of the River *La Plata*, in 21 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and 66 Degrees of Western Longitude. The Town stands in a fine Plain, and is a much more fruitful Soil than either *Potosi* or *Porco*; and is the See of an Archbishop, and the Residence of the Governor and Courts of Justice of this Province; the Inhabitants whereof are exceeding rich. The Cathedral, with the rest of the Churches and Convents, are very magnificent; and the Revenues of the Archbishoprick are said to amount to 80,000 Crowns per Annum.

ARICA lies in 18 Degrees 20 Minutes South Latitude, on the *South-Sea*, 100 Leagues North-West of *Potosi*, and is the Port-Town, where most of the Treasure is embarked for *Lima*.

BEFORE the Arrival of the *Spaniards*, there was only one great Town in every Province; all the rest were Villages, consisting of little Huts or Cottages, that did not deserve the Name of Towns: But in the Capital of every Province was a Palace belonging to the Governor, or Vassal Prince, a Temple dedicated to the Sun, and a Convent of select Virgins, resembling those of the Imperial City of *Cusco*; there were also

PERU. four Royal Highways running through the whole Empire, that centered in the grand Square, or Market-Place of *Cusco*: And upon these Highways were Magazines and Store-Houses of the Incas, sufficient to supply all the Forces of the Provinces in which they stood: The *Indians* had also noble Aqueducts, by which they brought Water into their great Towns, and Corn-Fields many Miles, which rendered the most barren Lands fruitful; as was the Usage of the ancient *Persians*, and many other People, where the Soil was dry and sandy, like that of *Peru*.

I HAVE already described the Palaces of the Incas, and the Temple of the Sun at *Cusco*; by which Model those in the other Provinces were built. As to the Convents of select Virgins, those seem to have been built like the Cloisters of *Europe*, with Cells for the Virgins on the Sides of them, without any upper Rooms.

IN the Nunneries of *Cusco*, there were no less than 1500 Virgins, all of the Blood of the Incas, or Emperors: And in the Convents of every Province the Nuns were the Kindred of the Vassal Princes, or of the Lords of the respective Provinces. But, according to *De-la-Vega*, these Nuns were not intended for the Service of the Temple of the Sun: On the contrary, no Female was ever suffered to enter these Temples, nor was any Man admitted to come within the Walls of these Nunneries.

Persons and Habits.

THE *Peruvians*, are of the usual Stature of the *Europeans*; here are no Giants, Lilliputians or Monsters, as the first Discoverers of this Country pretended. Their Complexion is a deep Copper-Colour, but no Blacks were found here, till the *Europeans* carried them thither, though the Equinotial runs cross their Country, as it does over *Africa*, the Country of the Negroes. Their Hair and Eyes are black: They pull up the Hair of their Beards, and other Parts, by the Roots: The Hair of their Heads was worn by some, but others cut it off. The several Nations were distinguished by their Head-Dresses; some wore whole Pieces of Cotton-Linen, wrapped about their Heads like Turbants; others had

only a single Piece of Linen tied about their Heads; some wore a Kind of Hats; others Caps in the Form of a Sugar-Loaf; and there were a Multitude of other different Fashions, which they never altered but continued the same in their respective Nations and Tribes from Generation to Generation. But this is to be understood of the better sort of People; for the rest, as far as I can perceive, went bare-headed; at least the *Spaniards* have represented them so in the Pictures they have given us of the *Peruvians* at the Time of their Conquest. The Head-Dress, Cap or Turbant, seems to have been granted to their Chiefs as a Mark of Distinction: Their Heads and Bodies also were anointed with Oil, or Fat; and some of them used Paint, like the rest of the *Americans*.

DE-LA-VEGA, speaking of the ancient *Indians*, and of some Nations of them in his Days, says, their Manner of clothing or covering their Bodies, was, in some Countries, as immodest as ridiculous: That some had no covering but what Nature gave them; though others, perhaps, for Ostentation, girt a Piece of Cotton Linen about their Waists. He had seen some Nations of *South-America* that went perfectly and naked, that no Arguments but Force could prevail on some of their menial Servants to wear Clothes.

IN another Place *De-la-Vega* observes, that it was one of the established Laws of the Incas, that no Man should change the Habit and Fashion of his Country, tho' he changed his Habitation.

THE principal Ornaments of the *Peruvians* were Rings and Jewels in their Ears, which they stretched to a monstrous Size, and occasioned the *Spaniards* to give some of them the Appellation of the *People with great Ears*.

THEY had also Chains of Jewels and Shells about their Necks; but I do not find the *Peruvians* wore Gold Plates, or Rings, in their Noses, like the *Indians* situate North of the Equator.

ANTONIO de Herera relates, that when the *Spaniards* first invaded the North Part of *Peru*, they were opposed by a People

PERU. ple that were entirely naked; but painted, some red, others yellow: But among these he informs us, there were some (probably their Chiefs) that had Mantles, and other Garments made of Cotton, or of Wool, and adorned with Jewels.

THE *Americans* were no less surprized at the Complexion and Dress of the *Spaniards*, than the *Spaniards* were at theirs; but admired nothing so much as their long Beards, having never seen a Beard in their Country; and their glittering Swords and Fire-Arms perfectly amazed them. However, as the *Spaniards* did not at first treat them in a hostile Manner, they adored these white Strangers as so many Gods: I shall only add, under this Head of Complexion and Dress, that nothing amazed the *Indians* more than the Blackness of the Negro Slaves the *Spaniards* carried with them. They could not believe this to be natural, having never seen a Black in *America*; they desired the *Spaniards*, therefore, to let them make the Experiment, and try if they could not wash off the black Paint.

Genius. As to their Genius *Garcilasso de la Vega* represents the ancient *Peruvians* as barbarous Canibals, without Religion or Government; that they neither built Houses, or cultivated the Soil, but dwelt in Caves, and subsisted on Roots, Herbs, and the Fruits of the Earth; enjoyed their Women in common, and did not understand what Property meant, but that their Father, the Sun, from whom the Incas or Sovereigns of *Peru* descended, sent a Son and Daughter from Heaven to instruct them in the Worship of himself (the Sun) and to polish and reform the Natives, and that this happened about 500 Years before the *Spaniards* arrived; but what the State of the Country was then is very uncertain, since those People had no Way of recording past Transactions. The *Spaniards*, however, acknowledge they found the *Peruvians* a polite ingenious People, that they exceeded most Nations in the World in Quickness of Wit and Strength of Judgment, which appears in that, without the Help of Letters, they attained the Knowledge of many Things which the

VOL. II. N° CIV.

PERU. Learning of the *Egyptians*, *Chaldeans*, and *Greeks*, could never reach. As to their Military Skill and Conduct, making Allowances for Circumstances, they appeared also superior to the *Spaniards*. Let me see says my Author, the bravest Captains of *France* and *Spain* on Foot, without Horses, without Armour, without Spears, Swords or Fire-Arms; with no other Clothes than their Shirts, no other Head-Piece than a Cap of Feathers, or Garland of Flowers, and a Shield made of a Piece of Mat, and let their Diet be only Herbs and Roots of the Field; then let us see how they will be able to oppose Swords, Spears, Guns, &c.

ON the contrary, were the *Indians* armed as the *Europeans* are, trained up in the same Military Discipline, and instructed in the Art of War by Sea and Land, they would be a more terrible Enemy than the *Turks*.

THE *Indians* of *Chili*, we see, having furnished themselves with *European* Arms, are at this Day a Match for the *Spaniards*, and have driven them out of many Places they had possessed themselves of in that Country.

IN the liberal Arts, it must be acknowledged they were very defective: But as to **Sciences:** Astronomy, they had observed the various Motions of the Planet *Venus*, the Increase and Decrease of the Moon. The Incas also observed, that the Sun performed his Course in the Space of a Year; though the Common People divided it only by the Seasons, and the End of their Harvest, with them, was the End of the Year; while the Incas marked out the Summer and Winter Solstices by high Towers, which they erected on the East and West of the City of *Cusco*. When the Sun came to rise directly opposite to four of these Towers, erected on the East Side of the City, and to set just against those of the West, it was then the Summer Solstice; and in like Manner, when it came to rise and set against four other Towers, it was the Winter Solstice; which Towers, *De-la-Vega* says, were standing in his Time. They had also erected Marble Pillars in the great Court before the Temple of the Sun, by which they observed the Equinoxes,

PERU. and when the Sun came near the Equator, the Priests attended, and waited to see what Shadow the Pillars cast; and when the Sun at its Rising, came to dart a Shadow, directly from it, and at Mid-Day, the Pillars cast no Shade, but were enlightened on all Sides, they then concluded the Sun to be in the Equinoctial, and crowned the Pillars with Garlands of Flowers and odoriferous Herbs; and, as they held the Sun then appeared in its greatest Lustre, this was one of their chief Festivals, wherein they offered to this Deity, rich Presents of Gold and Precious Stones.

AND as they described their Year by the Course of the Sun, so their Months were distinguished by the Moon, and their Weeks were called Quarters of the Moon; but they had no Names for the Days of the Week, but the Order they stood in, as the First, Second, Third, &c. They were astonished at the Eclipses of the Sun and Moon; and when the Sun hid his Face, believed it was for their Sins, imagining it prognosticated Famine, War, and Pestilence, or some other terrible Calamity.

WHEN the Moon was entering into an Eclipse, and it began to grow dark, they imagined she was sick; and when totally obscured, that she was dying; and sounded their Trumpets, Kettles, and Pans, and every Thing that would make a Noise to rouse her from this Lethargy; and taught their Children to cry out, and call upon *Mama Quille*, or Mother Moon, that she would not die and leave them to perish. They made no Predictions from the Sun or Moon, or the Conjunction of the Stars, but chiefly from their Dreams, or the Entrails of Beasts they offered in Sacrifice; and when they saw the Sun set in the Sea, as they might every Night to the Westward, they imagined the Waters were divided by the Force of the Fire, and that the Sun plunged himself into the Deep, diving quite thro' the Sea, to appear next Morning in the East.

THEIR Amantas, or Philosophers, were Poets also, and invented Comedies and Tragedies, which were acted on their Festivals, before the King and the Royal Fa-

mily; the Actors being the great Lords of PERU. the Court, and principal Officers of the Army, every one acting the Part that was agreeable to his Quality or Post: They had no constant Sects of Actors to personate others.

THESE Amantas, also, composed Songs and Ballads; for they had both Vocal and Instrumental Musick, some resembling our Trumpets, Flutes, and other Wind-Musick, but intolerably harsh and disagreeable to an Ear used to softer Sounds. They had also their String-Musick, but not a Whit better than the former.

THEY knew something of Painting and Statuary, as appears by the Furniture and Ornaments of their Temples and Palaces; every Plant and Animal almost, being represented in Gold or Silver Plate; and this brings me to treat of their Mechanick Arts: And first of their Gold and Silver Smiths, of whom, says the Royal Historian *De-la-Vega*, though there were great Numbers that laboured constantly at their Trade, yet were they not so skilful as to make an Anvil of any Metal; but made Use of a certain hard Stone of a yellowish Colour, which they smoothed and polished; nor had they learned to put Handles to their Hammers, but beat their Plate with certain round Pieces of Copper; neither had they any Files, or Graving-Tools, or Bellows for melting down their Metals; but instead of Bellows, had Copper Pipes of a Yard long, and small at one End, almost in the Form of a Trumpet, with which they blowed up their Fires. They had no Tongs to take their heated Metal out of the Fire, but drew it out with a Stick or Copper Bar, and cast it into a Heap of wet Earth to cool; and as they had learned that the Stream or Effluvia arising from hot or melted Metals, were prejudicial to their Health, all their Foundries were in the open Air, without any Covering. Their Carpenters had no other Tools than Hatchets made of Copper or Flint, no Saws, Augers, or Planes, not having learned the Use of Iron; though they did not want Mines of that Metal; and instead of Nails, as has been observed already, they fastened their Timber

PERU. Timber together with Cords or Withs. Nor had their Stone-Cutters any Tools but sharp Flints or Pebbles, with which they wore out the Stone, in a Manner, with perpetual Rubbing: Pullies and other Engines also were wanting, for lifting and placing Stones in their Buildings; all was done by Strength of Hand, and Multitudes were employed to remove a Piece of Stone or Timber, which an ordinary Team of Horses would have drawn upon proper Carriages.

A Thorn, or a fine Cone, served them for a Needle, and the Sinews of Animals, or the Fibres of some Plant, instead of Thread. They had no Scissars, and their Knives were Flint or Copper; nothing was more acceptable to them than Steel Razors and Scissars.

Food.

THE Food of the *Peruvians*, before the *Spaniards* took Possession of their Country, was chiefly Maize, or *Indian Corn*, which they ground to Flour, and made Cakes of; they Boiled it also, and made a Sort of Hasty-Pudding of the Maize; and in some Countries, that did not produce Maize, they had a very small Grain or Seed, that was produced from a Plant like Spinage; and this they converted to the same Uses. In other Parts, they had the Cassava Root, which they boiled, dried, and ground to Powder; of which also, they made thin Cakes, that served them instead of Bread: They eat also Potatoes, and other Roots, and almost all Manner of Fruits, raw, roasted, and boiled, which their Country produced; nor was there scarce an Herb that grew, but what served them for Food, not as Sauce or Salads, as we use them, but as substantial Dishes: As to Flesh, they eat very little, for their Incas and great Lords were Masters of all the Cattle wild and tame, and of all the Game of the Country, which the Common People were not suffered to take or kill, under the severest Penalties. But there was a general Hunting appointed by their Princes once a Year, wherein a great deal of Venison and Game was taken, and distributed to the People, who cut it in thin Slices, and dried it; and this with

the Flesh of the tame Cattle, which was **PERU.** also given them annually, served for the whole Year; they never eat Joints of Meat, or, indeed, any Quantity of it, as the *Europeans* do; but having cut their dried Flesh in Pieces, stewed and seasoned it high with Axi, or Pepper, they eat it as Sauce to their other Food, as we eat Anchovies or Pickles, to relish our Flesh. I do not know any Country between the Tropicks, where the People eat great Meals of Flesh: In many Places, they eat none at all (much less Human Flesh.) The *Spanish* Historians observe, that one of their Men eat ten Times as much as an *Indian*. Their usual Way of dressing their Food, was in Pans, or Dishes, over their Stoves, on which they stewed or baked it, and they roasted their Fruits in the Embers frequently.

THE usual Times for Eating, according to *De-la-Vega*, were between Eight and Nine in the Morning, and about Sunset in the Evening; for they made but two Meals a Day. However, they were not altogether so abstemious in Drinking as Eating. Their Gentry, and great Men, who had little else to do, sat drinking great Part of the Day. Of the *Indian Corn* that served them for Bread, they made a Kind of Malt, and brewed good Strong Drink of it. The Maygey Tree, also afforded them a very strong intoxicating Liquor; and they made a Kind of Wine of almost all Manner of Fruits, by boiling and steeping them in Water; but the Common People, I find, very seldom drank any strong Liquors.

THE usual Beverage here, as well as in *Mexico*, was Water, with a little of the Flour of Maize infused into it, being the same that our Buccaneers called *Pofole*, or *Poor Soul*: But as they have both Palm and Cocoa Trees, there is no Doubt, but the *Spaniards* have taught them to draw Palm Wine, and drink the Liquor of the Cocoa-Nut.

THERE are much the same Animals in *Animals. Peru*, as in *Mexico*. Those peculiar to *Peru*, are the *Pacos*, a Kind of Sheep, formed like a Camel, and about the Size of

PERU. of a Stag, covered with a Sort of coarse Wool, and their Flesh is in great Esteem; these were the only Beasts of Burthen in *Peru*, when the *Spaniards* arrived in that Country, and would carry a Weight of sixty or seventy Pounds.

THE Vicuna, *Peruvian* Goat, is an Animal resembling the *European* Goat, in which the Bezoar-Stone is found, as large as a Walnut.

THEIR Deer are less than those in the Eastern Continent, and their Wild Beasts are not so fierce.

THE *European* Cattle exported thither are vastly encreased; many of them run wild, and are hunted like other Game.

Vegetables.

THE most valuable Plants are the Kinquenna, or *Peruvian* Bark, which grows in the Province of *Quito*, on the Mountains near the City *Lóxa*, in 5 Degrees South Latitude. This Plant is about the Size of a Cherry-Tree, the Leaves round, and indented, and bears a long, reddish Flower, from whence arises a Pod with a Kernel like an Almond. Bark also grows in the Mountains of *Potosi*, in 22 Degrees South Latitude; but neither the Flower nor Fruit, have the same Virtue as the Bark.

THEY have now Plenty of *European* Corn and Wine, and sow and Plant at any Time of the Year, introducing the Rivulets into their Grounds at Pleasure.

THE Cassava-Root they make Bread of here, as in other Parts of *America*.

THE Balsam of *Peru* proceeds from the Trunk and Branches of a little Tree.

BESIDES which, this Country yields Storax, Guaiacum, and several other Gums and Drugs.

Minerals.

GOLD is found in every Province in *Peru*, washed down from the Mountains into the Rivulets, and is generally of eighteen or twenty Carats.

THE Marcasite is a Mineral, where the Gold and the Stone is formed and incorporated together, and is called Gold-Ore.

SILVER Mines abound in *Peru*; those of *Potosi* are the richest, discovered in the Year 1545; it is a solid Rock, and the Ore so hard, that they break it with Hammers, and it splits as if it were Flint.

PERU. THERE are Quicksilver Mines near *Li-ma*, particularly in the Mountains of *Oro-peza*; it is found in a Kind of Stone called Cinnabar, which also yields Vermilion.

THE *Spaniards* did not discover these Mines until the Year 1567; and they did not begin to refine their Silver with Mercury, at *Potosi*, until the Year 1571; whereby they extracted a great deal more Silver from their Ore, than they could do before by Fire alone.

QUICKSILVER is sometimes found inclosed in its own Mineral, and sometimes fluid, and very often embodied in natural Cinnabar: They make Use of great Iron Retorts to separate it from the Mineral, and by the Fire and the fresh Water into which it falls, it is rendered fluid.

THE *Peruvians* adored the great Creator of Heaven and Earth, whom they denominated *Paca Camac*, that Intelligence which animated the World. They seldom built Temples, or offered Sacrifices to him, but worshipped him in their Hearts. There was one Temple, however, erected in a Valley, called from thence the Valley of *Paca Camac*, dedicated, To the Unknown God, which was standing when the *Spaniards* came thither. The principal Sacrifices offered to the Sun were Lambs; but they offered all Sorts of Cattle, Fowls, and Corn; and even their best and finest Cloths, all which they burnt in the Place of Incense, rendering their Thanks and Praises to the Sun, for having sustained and nourished all those Things for the Use and Support of Mankind. They had also their Drink-Offerings made of their Maize, or *Indian* Corn, steeped in Water, and when they first drank after their Meals (for they never drink while they are eating) they dipped the Tip of their Finger into the Cup, and lifting up their Eyes with great Devotion, gave the Sun Thanks for their Liquor, before they presumed to take a Draught of it.

ALL the Priests of the Sun, that officiated in the City of *Cusco*, were of the Royal Blood.

BESIDES the Worship of the Sun, they paid some Kind of Adoration to the Images

PERU. Images of several Animals and Vegetables that had a Place in their Temples.

THESE were the Images brought from the conquered Nations, where the People worshipped all Manner of Creatures, animate, or inanimate; for whenever a Province was subdued, their Gods were immediately removed to the Temple of the Sun at *Cusco*.

THEY had four grand Festivals annually, besides those they celebrated every Moon; the first of their great Feasts, called *Raymi*, was held in the Month of *June*, immediately after the Summer Solstice, which they did not only keep in Honour of the Sun, that blessed all Creatures with its Heat and Light, but in Commemoration of their first Inca, *Manca Capac*, and *Coya Mama Ocla*, his Wife and Sister, whom the Incas looked upon as their first Parents, descended immediately from the Sun, and sent by him into the World to reform and polish Mankind.

Festivals.

AT this Festival, all the Viceroy, Generals, Governors, Caraccas, and Nobility, were assembled at the Capital City of *Cusco*.

THE Emperor, or Inca, officiated at this Festival as High-Priest: For though there was another High-Priest of the Blood Royal, either Uncle or Brother of the Inca, to whom it belonged at other Times to officiate; yet this being the chief Feast, the Inca himself performed that Office.

THE Morning being come, the Inca, accompanied by his Brethren and near Relations, drawn up in Order, according to their Seniority, went in Procession, at Break of Day, to the Market-Place, barefoot, where they remained, looking attentively towards the East, in Expectation of the Rising-Sun; which no sooner appeared, but they fell on their Faces, and adored the glorious Orb with the most profound Veneration, acknowledging him to be their God and Father.

THE Caraccas, Vassal Princes, and Nobility, that were not of the Blood Royal, assembled separately in another Square, and performed the like Ceremony. Then great Doves of Sheep and Lambs were brought, out of which the Priests chose a black

VOL. II. N^o 104.

Lamb, and having killed and opened it, PERU. made their Prognosticks and Divinations thereupon, relating to Peace and War, and other Events, from the Entrails of the Beast, always turning the Head of the Animal towards the East when they killed it,

As to the Notions the *Peruvians* had of a future State, it is evident that they believed the Soul survived the Body, by the Incas constantly declaring they should go to Rest, or into a State of Happiness provided for them by their God and Father the Sun, when they left this World.

REVOLUTIONS of Peru.

VASCO Nuncz de Balboa, who first ^{Invasion of Peru.} discovered the South-Sea, or *Pacifick* Ocean, in the Year 1513, being constituted Adelentado, or Viceroy of all the Lands he should reduce to the Obedience of ~~Spain~~ in those Seas, he crossed the Equinoctial, and coming on the Coast of *Peru*, received certain Advice of the vast Riches it contained, and was preparing to take Possession of it, when *Pedrarias*, Governor of *Terra Firma*, under Pretence that *Vasco* was about to render himself independent of his Sovereign, caused him to be put to Death, that he himself might reap the Advantage of the Discovery; and accordingly he employed several skilful Pilots to pursue the same Track *Vasco* had traced out, in order to plant Colonies in *Peru*: But these Adventurers, discouraged by the Winds, which are always contrary to those who would sail near the Coast from *Panama* to the Southward, represented the Project as impracticable, and *Pedrarias*, being informed that there was Plenty of Gold Dust to be found in the Province of *Nicarague*, adjoining to that of *Terra Firma*, on the North, he dropped his Design of invading *Peru*, and gave Leave to three enterprizing Gentlemen to try their Fortunes on that Side at their own Expence: Their Names were *Pizarro*, *Almagro*, and *De Luque*; the first two were Officers, who had already made considerable Fortunes in *America*, and *De Luque*, who was an Ecclesiastick; residing then at *Panama*, was richer than either of them: These Gentlemen agreed, that *Pizarro* should command the first Em-

barkation

P E R U. barkation; that *Almagro* should from Time to Time raise and send him Recruits; and, that *De Luque* should remain at *Panama*, and lay in Ammunition and Provisions for the Support of the Enterprise: And they agreed to share the Profits arising by the Expedition equally, after the Emperor's Fifth should be deducted.

Pizarro's first Voyage to Peru, 1525.

THE Difficulties *Pizarro* met with in his first Attempts from cross Winds and Currents, and the incessant Rains that fell near the Equator were such, that all his Men forsook him, and returned to *Panama*, except fourteen; but *Almagro* joining him with some Recruits, these two Heroes determined to continue their Course to the Southward, and having crossed the Bay of *Panama*, went on Shore, expecting to have found a Passage to *Peru* by Land; but the Country being overflowed, or encumbered by Rocks, Woods, and Mountains, they were obliged to return on Board again, and setting Sail to the Southward made so little Way, that they were two Years in advancing to the Bay of *Guiaquil*, in 3 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude.

Tumbez the first Town visited by the Spaniards.

THE first considerable Town they visited there, was the City of *Tumbez*; to the Cacique, or Prince whereof *Pizarro*, sent *Peter de Candia*, one of his Officers, to let him know they came as Friends, and desired to traffick with his People, and the Cacique thereupon sent them all Manner of Refreshments. This *Peter de Candia* was a Man of a very extraordinary Stature, and cloathed in shining Armour, in order to give the *Indians* the higher Opinion of these Strangers: The Cacique shewed him the Palace and Temple of *Tumbez*, where *Peter* observed that all their Vessels and Utensils almost were Gold, some of which the *Spaniards* were presented with in Lieu of the Presents *Pizarro* made them; who would, upon this Intelligence, no Doubt, have plundered the *Indians* of a great Deal more, if he had had a Force sufficient to have supported him in such an Attempt; but he thought it more prudent at this time, to return to *Panama*, and get a further Reinforcement before he proceeded to Hostilities; and parted, therefore, with the *Indians* in a friendly Manner, in Appearance at least.

RETURNING to *Panama*, in the Year **P E R U** 1527, and bringing some of the Natives of *Peru* with him, as well as a Specimen of the Treasures and Animals he met with. Crowds of Volunteers pressed to be entertained in his Service; but the Governor of *Panama* refusing to permit the Adventurers to raise Recruits here, they agreed that *Pizarro* should go over to *Spain*, and procure the Emperor's Commission, which he did, with a Grant of a twentieth Part of the Revenues and Profits of all the Countries they should conquer; which Grant being signed on the 26th of *July*, 1528, and some Months taken up in raising Forces, he returned with them to *Panama*, attended by his Brothers, *Ferdinand*, *John*, and *Gonzalo*.

He embarked again on Board three Ships at *Panama*, Anno 1530, taking with him 125 Soldiers, thirty-seven Horses, and such a Quantity of Arms, Ammunition and Stores as might enable him to fix Colonies on the *Peruvian* Coast; but meeting with the like contrary Winds he had done in the first Voyage, and finding it very inconvenient, and indeed impracticable, to keep the Horses longer on Board, he was obliged to land about 100 Leagues to the Northward of *Tumbez*: And now thinking himself strong enough to drive the naked *Indians* before him, he fell upon them, plundered their Towns, and made many of them Prisoners, without any Manner of Provocation; whereupon the rest fled from the Sea-Coasts up into the Country; and *Pizarro* was afterwards so distressed for Want of Provisions, and lost so many Men by Sicknefs and Hardships, and the fatiguing Marches through Bogs and Thickets of Mangroves, in this excessive hot Climate, that his Forces were exceedingly diminished, and he now, too late, perceived his Error, in not courting the Natives, being in no Condition to make a Conquest of *Peru* with the Forces he had left. He took most of the Treasure, therefore, he had plundered the *Indians* of, and sent his Ships back with it to *Panama* to raise more Recruits, inviting, at the same Time, some Adventurers from *Nicaragua*, and other Parts of *North America*, to come

• and

PERU and join him promising them a Share of the vast Treasures he was now assured of finding in *Peru*: And having, with infinite Labour, marched as far as *Tumbez*, in the Bay of *Guiaquil*, over the Mouths of abundance of rapid Streams, that fall into the *South-Sea*, under the Equator, he very fortunately found the *Peruvians* engaged in a Civil War, one Part of them adhering to their lawful Prince *Huascar*, and the other to *Atabilipa*, the Bastard Son of the preceding Emperor *Huana Capac*.

ALMAGRO, having brought *Pizarro* a Reinforcement of Troops, they advanced through the Valley of *Tumbez*, in which they met with some Opposition from the *Peruvians*, who now looked upon the *Spaniards* as their Enemies; but the Natives were put into such Confusion, by the *Spanish* Horse and Artillery, that they fled as the *Spaniards* advanced, and after the Slaughter of some Thousands of them, were forced to abandon the Town and Castle, and even the whole Valley of *Tumbez*, leaving behind them all the Gold and Silver Plate, Emeralds, Pearls, and other rich Spoils, which lay heaped up in the Temple of the Sun, and the Inca's Palace; being so vast a Treasure, that the *Spaniards* could scarce believe their Eyes, when they found themselves so suddenly possessed of it: And such was the Consternation of *Atabilipa*, and his whole Court, when the Fugitives related what Slaughter the Thunderers Ordinance made amongst them, and how impossible it was to escape the *Spanish* Horses, to which Animals their Fears had added Wings, that they concluded, if the *Spaniards* were not Gods, as they at first conjectured, they were certainly Devils, and that it was not possible for any Human Force to defend the Country against them: Of which *Pizarro* receiving Intelligence, resolved to take Advantage of the Terror they were in, and marched immediately to find out *Atabilipa*, while he remained under that Delusion; only he found it necessary to defer his March, till he had erected a slight Fortrefs on the Sea Coast (to which he gave the Name of *St. Michael's*) for receiving the Recruits that he expected, and

to serve him for a Place of Retreat and Security, in case any unforeseen Accident should happen.

THIS was the first *Spanish* Colony planted in *Peru*, and here the first Christian Church was erected in the Year 1531.

PIZARRO, whose Business it was to foment the Civil Wars, and prevent the *Peruvians* uniting their Forces against him, gave out, that he was come in the Name of the Great King of *Spain* (like a true *Spanish* Knight Errant) to relieve the Oppressed, and do Justice to those who were injured, which he soon found had the Effect he expected; for the Emperor *Huascar*, having been deposed and imprisoned by the Bastard *Atabilipa*, and all his Friends and faithful Subjects that had adhered to him, cruelly oppressed, they immediately sent an Embassy to *Pizarro*, to desire that he would assist them in delivering their Prince from his Captivity, and restore him to the Throne of his Ancestors; to whom the *Spanish* General returned a favourable Answer. And *Atabilipa*, who was yet scarce settled in the Throne he had usurped, apprehending he should soon be driven from it again, if the *Spaniards* joined with the loyal Party, endeavoured, by all possible Ways, to gain the Favour of *Pizarro*, sending a Messenger to excuse the Hostilities his Forces had committed at his landing; and not only promising what Satisfaction he should demand, but assuring him, he was ready to submit to the Commands of that Great Prince from whom he came.

THE Inca, or Emperor *Atabilipa*, having agreed to a Conference with the *Spaniards*, in the Fields of *Caxamalca*, *Pizarro* directed Father *Vincent*, a *Spanish* Friar, to require that both the Emperor and his Subjects should immediately profess themselves Christians: And while the Emperor was desiring the Friar to inform him what he meant by this Demand, *Pizarro*, and his *Spaniards*, fell upon the *Indians*, made a Signal for the great Guns to fire among the Thickest of them, and his Horse to attack and trample them under their Feet; the Dogs also were let loose upon them, while *Pizarro*, at the Head of his Infantry, marched up to the Golden Chair, or Throne,

PERU. Throne, on which *Atabilipa* was carried, and made him Prisoner. The poor *Indians*, it is said, when they saw what the Christians chiefly aimed at, threw themselves between the *Spaniards* and their Prince, to prevent his being taken; but not a Man of them offered to lift up a Weapon to defend himself, their Emperor having commanded the contrary: The People, therefore, were slaughtered like so many Sheep, till *Pizarro*, having made his Way through, or rather over the Heaps of the Slain, pulled down the Emperor from his Chair, with his own Hands, and took him Prisoner; in which Action he received a slight Wound from one of his own Soldiers that struck at the Inca; and the General was the only *Spaniard* that was hurt, though 5000 *Peruvians* were killed that Day, with their Arms in their Hands; which amounts to a Demonstration, that the *Peruvians* made no Resistance, and that this brave Action, the *Spaniards* boast of so much, may more properly be stiled a barbarous Butchery than a Victory; and I cannot help thinking that *Cervantes* had some of these *Spanish* Heroes that subdued *America* in his Eye, when he introduced that inimitable Champion *Don Quixote*, armed Cap-a-pee, charging a Flock of Sheep with his Lance: Let any one consult the *Spanish* Historiographer, *Antonio de Herera*, *Blas Valera*, and the rest of the *Spanish* Authors, who write of this Conquest, and they will see I do their Countrymen no Wrong in this Relation.

ALMAGRO, having raised a considerable Body of Forces at *Panama*, arrived at the Camp of *Pizarro* soon after the Slaughter of the *Indians*, and the Imprisonment of their Emperor *Atabilipa*. *Pizarro* went out to meet *Almagro*, congratulated his Arrival, received him with all the Marks of Affection and Esteem imaginable, and offered to divide the Spoils with him, though it is evident they were, at that Time, meditating each other's Destruction; and it is said, *Pizarro* distributed as much Gold and Silver at this Time among the *Spanish* Soldiers as amounted to 15,000,000 *l. Sterling*. The Soldiers being possessed of this prodigious Wealth, fell into all Manner of Excesses, raising the Price of Things to a

very great Rate, by offering any Sums to **PERU.** gratify their Appetites or Fancies; and never was Gaming at a higher Pitch, which, it is said, their Officers connived at, or rather encouraged, that the Soldiers, having lost their Money, and becoming dependent on them again, might be more under Command. And now *Pizarro* thought it a proper Time to send over the fifth Part of the Treasure to the Emperor, as he had stipulated, and with it his Brother *Ferdinando Pizarro*, to solicit for such Reinforcements as might establish the Dominion of the *Spaniards* in *Peru*, and to petition that his Government might be extended still further to the Southward; (the General having probably heard, by this Time, that the chief Silver Mines lay farther South than 200 Leagues, beyond which his Patent did not extend.) Marshal *Almagro* also employed his Agents to represent to the Court of *Spain*, with what Expence and Application he had sent and carried Re-inforcements, and supplied the General with Ammunition and Provisions from Time to Time, to enable him to make this Conquest; and to desire that all that Part of *South America*, which lay to the Southward of the Lands granted to *Pizarro*, might be put under his Government: And with these Agents, sent by the General and the Marshal, returned several Adventurers, to the Number of Fifty or Threescore, who having obtained 30,000. or 40,000 Ducats a-piece for their respective Shares of the Spoils, were perfectly satisfied with it, and chose to enjoy what they had got the Remainder of their Lives in their own Country, rather than undergo more Hazards and Difficulties to increase their Fortunes. These Men knew how to set some Bounds to their Desires; but as for the Generals, and many more of those that remained in *Peru* (who were about 400 Men) it appears nothing was capable of satisfying their Avarice and Ambition; most of them perished in the Pursuit of Wealth and unbounded Power, after they were possessed of more than would have made most Men happy, or at least easy in their Circumstances.

ATABILIPA, the Royal Prisoner, having offered *Pizarro* a prodigious Treasure for his Liberty, and actually paid great

PERU. Part of it, if not all (as some of their Historians admit) *Pizarro*, notwithstanding, determined to take away his Life, pretending that he encouraged the *Indians* to attempt his Rescue and cut off the *Spaniards*; and that he might justify his Conduct in this Proceeding, he caused a formal Process to be drawn up against him, consisting of the following Articles.

1. THAT *Huascar* Inca, being his eldest Brother and lawful Sovereign, and himself a Bastard, he had caused *Huascar* to be deposed and imprisoned, and afterwards usurped his Throne.

2. THAT he had caused his said Brother to be murdered, since he became a Prisoner to the *Spaniards*.

3. THAT *Atabilipa* was an Idolater.

4. THAT he caused his Subjects to sacrifice Men and Children.

5. THAT he had raised unjust Wars, and been guilty of the Blood of many People.

6. THAT he kept a great many Concubines.

7. THAT he exacted Taxes and Tribute of the *Peruvians*, since the *Spaniards* possessed his Country, and consumed and embezzled the publick Treasure.

8 THAT he had incited the *Indians* to rebel and make War against the *Spaniards*, since he had been their Prisoner.

THE last Article being chiefly insisted on, the Inca absolutely denied that Part of the Charge, and complained of the Treachery of *Pizarro*, who after he had extorted such a Ransom from him, now broke his Faith, and would put him to Death under a Colour of Law; and desired he might be sent over to *Spain*, and tried before the Emperor. He urged, that he had never offended the *Spaniards*, but greatly enriched them; and that they could not, without Injustice, take away his Life. However, the *Spaniards* proceeded to examine Witnesses against him on these Articles, whose Testimony being interpreted by *Philip* the *Peruvian*, whom the *Spaniards* admit was an Enemy to the Inca, and *Pizarro* and *Almagro* sitting as his Judges, they made no Difficulty to condemn him to be burnt; and Friar *Vincent*

Valverde, it is said, approved the Sentence, under his Hand, that it might give the greater Satisfaction to the Court of *Spain*. The Friar also took great Pains to induce the Inca to turn Christian, and receive Baptism before he died, which he consented to, they say, upon Condition, that the Execution might be changed from Burning to Strangling; and he was accordingly strangled, the Friar having first given him Absolution, and assigned him a Seat in Paradise, notwithstanding the many Crimes they had charged him with.

IN the mean Time, *Atauchi*, Brother to the late Emperor *Atabilipa*, having collected a great Quantity of Treasure to purchase his Brother's Ransom, brought it to *Caxamalca*; but finding *Atabilipa* murdered, and the *Spaniards* marched from thence, determined to be revenged on them, and joining his Forces with some other *Peruvian* Generals, surprized the *Spaniards* upon their March to *Cusco*, killed some of them, and made several Prisoners; and amongst the rest, *Sancho de Cuellar*, who had drawn up the Process against the late Inca *Atabilipa*, and attended his Execution. With these Prisoners, the *Indian* Generals retired again to *Caxamalca*, where they strangled *Sancho* the *Spaniard*, at the very same Post where their Emperor was put to Death; but understanding that *Francis de Chaves*, *Ferdinando de Haro*, and some of the rest of their Prisoners, had protested against the Inca's Death, they resolved to give them their Lives and Liberties, entering into the following Articles of Peace and Friendship with the Captive *Spaniards*, before they dismissed them, viz. That neither Party, for the future, should offer any Violence to the other; and, particularly, that the *Spaniards* should not attempt to depose *Manco Capac*, who had been proclaimed at *Cusco*, and was the lawful Heir of the Inca *Huana Capac*: That both Sides should release their Prisoners, and that the *Spaniards* should not treat the *Indians* as Slaves, but Free Men: That the Laws of their Country should be observed inviolably, when they were not repugnant to those of Christianity: and that this Treaty should

PERU. be ratified by the *Spanish* General, and his Sovereign the Emperor of the *Romans*. The *Spaniards* insisted, on their Parts, that the *Indians* should profess the Christian Religion; that a Part of the Country should be assigned them for their Subsistence, and that they might retain the *Indians* as hired Servants, though not as Slaves; which the *Indians* agreed to, and dismissed their Prisoners with rich Presents; but *Pizarro* and *Almagro* positively refused to ratify the Articles, and would hear of nothing but an absolute Submission, and an entire Surrender of their Country and their Persons to the Will of the Christians; which occasioned long and bloody Wars afterwards. Whereas the *Spanish* Historians admit, they might have established Christianity in *Peru*, without spilling a Drop of Blood, if the Ambition and Avarice of the Adventurers had not prevented it. The People were as well disposed, they observe, to receive the Christian Faith, as could be wished, and ready to have acknowledged the King of *Spain* their Sovereign; and that their Inca should hold his Dominion of him, if they might have been treated as Subjects and Free Men ought to be; and the Inca would have assigned Lands and Revenues to the *Spaniards*, provided his Subjects might have been allowed to have had any Property in the Residue; but this would not satisfy the Views of the rapacious *Spaniards*; they could have had no Pretence to plunder their Temples and Palaces, usurp whole Provinces, enslave the Natives, and arrive at Sovereign Power, if they had cultivated a Friendship, and entered into an Alliance with the Natives; what Zeal soever, therefore, the *Spaniards* might pretend for Propagating the Christian Religion, it is evident, Wealth and Power were the only Deities these Adventurers adored, as has been already observed in the Conduct of their Brethren in *Mexico*.

PIZARRO marched forward to the Capital City of *Cusco*, where he arrived in the Month of *October*, 1532, the People having abandoned the City, and carried off the greatest Part of their Treasure; but still the *Spaniards* found so much left be-

hind, that they were amazed at the Heaps PERU. of Gold and Silver they met with there; but the reigning Inca, *Manco Capac*, being about to assemble the whole *Peruvian* Nation against these Invaders, *Pizarro* thought fit to treat with the Inca and his *Peruvians*. He even invited the Emperor to return to his Capital, proclaimed him Inca, and assured him, he would faithfully observe the Capitulation that had been made with the *Spanish* Prisoners. These Measures, *Pizarro* found himself under a Necessity of taking at this Time, not only because he saw all the Southern Provinces of *Peru* assembling against them, under the Inca *Manco Capac*, but because *Rumminavi*, *Quinquiz*, and other *Peruvian* Generals, had assembled a very great Army in the Northern Provinces, and possessed themselves of *Quito*, which obliged him to send a considerable Detachment of his Forces, under the Command of *Sebastian Belalcazar*, to re-inforce the new Colony at *St. Michael's*, and to make Head against the *Peruvian* Generals in *Quito*.

BELALCAZAR, thereupon, marching into *Quito*, made himself Master of the Capital City, and was in a fair Way of reducing the rest, when Advice was brought, that Don *Pedro de Alvarado* was upon the Coast of *Peru* with a considerable Fleet, and had landed 700 or 800 Men, intending to take the Government of *Peru* upon him, and expel *Pizarro* and *Almagro* from thence; at which News, these two Adventurers were thunder-struck, apprehending they should be dispossessed of all the Spoils they had taken, and perhaps sent Prisoners to *Spain*, to give an Account of their murdering the late Inca *Atahualpa*, and massacring his People; they continued, therefore, to cultivate a good Understanding with the *Indians* of the Southern Provinces, and treated the Inca and his Subjects, as their Friends and Allies, promising to perform punctually whatever they had agreed on; knowing how great an Advantage it must be to have the Country in their Interest, if they were obliged to contend with *Alvarado* for the Possession of it.

PERU. THE next Precaution Pizarro took, was to detach 100 Spaniards under the Command of his Confederate Almagro, towards the Sea-Coast, to join with Belalcázar, and observe the Motions of Alvarado; for they were determined not to resign easily, what they had obtained with so much Labour and Hazard.

BUT Matters were afterwards accommodated in a friendly Manner, and the following Articles agreed on between these Rivals; viz. That Pizarro and Almagro should pay Alvarado 100,000 Pesoes; that such of the Officers and Soldiers who came with Alvarado, as desired it, should serve under Pizarro in Peru, and be provided for as their own Troops were; and, that thereupon, Alvarado should return to his Government of Guatimala in Mexico: But being obliged to wait some Time, to receive the Treasure promised him, Alvarado proposed to visit Pizarro at Cusco, and take a View of that famous Capital, of which he had heard such surprizing Accounts; all which Almagro took Care to advise Pizarro of, who apprehending, that Alvarado might alter his Mind, upon seeing the rich City of Cusco, sent him a Compliment, that he would not give him the Trouble of taking so long a Journey, but would meet him in the Valley of Pacha Camac, and bring the Sum with him, Almagro had promised: And accordingly, leaving Cusco to the Care of the Inca and his Brothers, he set out with a Party of Horse, and a Detachment of Indians, and arrived at the Valley of Pacha Camac, where he met with Alvarado and Almagro; and, to ingratiate himself with the former, gave him the Command of all the Troops, while he remained there, commanding all the Officers to obey Don Alvarado's Orders, and acknowledge no other General while he continued in Peru; and was so much better than his Word, that he paid Alvarado 20,000 Pesoes more than he had stipulated for the Expences of his Journey, besides a great Number of Turquoises, Emeralds, and Vessels of Gold, for that General's particular Use: Whereupon, Alvarado returned to Mexico, entirely satisfied with his Reception, and the Treasure he had acquired; especially when he saw all the

Gentlemen that had accompanied him in PERU: this Enterprize well provided for: However, it is conjectured, that he found Pizarro and Almagro better established in Peru than he expected, or he would not have quitted that Country so easily, which he had undergone such Hazards and Expences to visit.

THIS Alvarado was one of the Generals under Cortez, and had a great Share in the Conquest of Mexico, and had the Province of Guatimala conferred on him, as a Reward for his Services; but hearing that Gold abounded more in Peru, obtained a Commission from the Emperor to share the Spoils of that Empire with Pizarro and Almagro. He equipped a good Fleet of Ships, therefore, in the Harbours of Guatimala, and embarked 700 or 800 Soldiers, most of them Cavalry, Anno 1535, but meeting with contrary Winds, was obliged to land at Cape St. Francis, a Degree North of the Equinoctial, and march over Morasses and craggy Mountains, where he lost a great many Men and Horses. However, he arrived at St. Michael's with a more numerous Body of Troops than Pizarro and Almagro commanded. They offered Alvarado, therefore, the Sum above-mentioned, and to provide for all the Officers and Soldiers he brought with him, in lieu of his Pretensions on Peru, with which he was so well satisfied, that he parted with them in a friendly Manner, and returned to Mexico, suffering as many of his People as chose it, to remain in Peru, and serve under Pizarro and Almagro, which great Numbers of them chose to do, and thereby established the Power of the two Generals Pizarro and Almagro, who dividing their Forces, Almagro marched to Cusco, while Pizarro employed himself in building Towns and establishing Colonies on the Coasts; particularly, he founded the Capital City of Lima, in 12 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, on the Banks of a River, six Miles East of the South-Sea, and the Harbour of Calao. The Spaniards gave the Name of Los Reys, or the City of the Kings, to Lima, it being finished on Twelfth-Day, when the Kings made Presents to our Saviour; but it is, however,

PERU. however, usually called *Lima*, from the Valley in which it stands.

PIZARRO also erected the Port-Town of *Truxillo* in 8 Degrees of South Latitude about the same Time) and divided the Lands about those Cities among his Officers and Fellow-Adventurers, with the Native *Indians* who resided on those Lands, and were obliged to cultivate them, and perform all other Services their proud Masters required; and when the Lands were sold or alienated, the *Indians* upon the Lands passed with them, without being mentioned in the Conveyance. And thus the *Spaniards* proceeded to divide the Lands and the People upon them in other Parts of *Peru*.

In the mean Time, *Pizarro* procured his Grant to be confirmed, of the Country from the Equinoctial 200 Leagues to the Southward of it; and *Almagro* had a Grant of 200 Leagues farther South; the first having the Title of Marquis conferred on him, and *Almagro* that of Marshal.

CHILI, which lies South of *Peru*, and for some Time esteemed Part of it, being thus allotted to *Almagro*, he marched from *Cusco* thither, at the Head of 500 *Spaniards*, and 15,000 *Indians*; Part of them armed and serving for his Vanguard, and the rest to carry his Baggage, and bring him in Provisions. The Inca, *Manco Capac*, also sent with him his Brother the Inca *Paulla*, and the High-Priest *Vil-la Oma*, that he might meet with no Impediment in his March, but receive all possible Assistance from the *Indians* subject to the Inca, in the Provinces through which he passed. The *Spaniards* also took a great many Negro Slaves along with them; and that all the Officers and Soldiers might be well equipped and provided for this long March, *Almagro* lent them the Value of 200,000 Crowns, taking only a Note from the Soldiers, he lent any Money to, for Repayment of it out of the Spoils they expected in this Expedition.

ALMAGRO advanced as far as the Province of *Charcas*, 200 Leagues to the Southward of *Cusco*, without meeting with any Thing to obstruct his Designs, that

Country being all under the Dominion of **PERU**, the Inca, and supplying him with Provisions as he went; but finding the *Charcas* a wretched barren Country, and being ignorant of the rich Mines it contained, he resolved to proceed further to the Kingdom of *Chili*; though, had he known the invaluable Mines of *Potosi* were situated in this barren Country, he would certainly have set up his Rest here; for in this Mountain, was afterwards found, more Silver than any, or perhaps all the Countries in the Old World produced at that Time.

THE *Indians* informed *Almagro*, that there were two Ways to approach the Kingdom of *Chili*, both extremely difficult and hazardous. The first was over a Branch of the Mountains of the *Andes*, or *Cordeleras*; that at this Time, (being Winter) were covered deep in Snow, and so cold that no *Indian* could live on the Tops of them, (though this was much the shortest Passage, if it could be performed;) the other Way was over a Sandy Desert by the Sea-Side, in which they would be in Danger of perishing by excessive Heat, and the Scarcity of Water; intimating, they were averse to the Journey either Way, but most dreaded that over the Mountains of the *Andes*: However, *Almagro* resolved to move forward, took the Way of the Mountains, as being the shortest, and more agreeable to the Constitutions of his *Europeans*, than the scorching Sands; and having gathered what Provisions the Country afforded, and laid it on the Shoulders of the *Indian* Porters, he began to ascend the Hills; but had not advanced far before he found the Snows so deep, that they were forced to dig their Way through them, the *Indians* dying by Hundreds, with the intense Cold; the *Spaniards*, also, were almost starved, and many of them perished with their Horses on those Mountains, either by Cold or Want; and some of the Men lost their Fingers and Toes, who escaped with their Lives. However, *Almagro* himself, with between 300 and 400 *Spaniards*, the Inca *Paulla*, the High-Priest, and about 5000 *Indians*, reached the other

Side

PERU. Side of the Mountain, and came into a fine, temperate, and plentiful Country; and at the Command of the Inca *Paul-la*, the Natives immediately brought all Manner of Provisions and Refreshments into the Camp: The People of *Chili* being informed that the *Spaniards* were *Viracochas*, descended from their God the Sun, and that their Inca *Manco Capac* ordered they should bring them all those Tributes they had laid up, during the late Civil Wars between *Huascar* and *Atahualpa*, they presented the *Spaniards* with Gold and Silver Vessels to the Value of 200,000 Ducats or Nobles; and not many Days after, collected the Value of 300,000 more, and presented to *Almagro*; whereupon the Marshal did not only give up and cancel all the Bonds and Notes his Soldiers had given him, but distributed Part of the Treasure amongst them.

ALMAGRO, having rested and refreshed his weary Troops, proposed to the Inca *Paula* the advancing farther into *Chili*, and subduing those Parts that were not subject to the Inca; to which he consented, and assembling several Thousand *Indians* to re-inforce the Marshal, they marched with their united Forces against the Natives of the more Southerly Parts of *Chili*, with whom they had several smart Encounters, but, at length, had the good Fortune to reduce those Provinces under their Subjection; and being joined about this Time by *Ruis Diaz* and *John de Harada*, with upwards of 100 *Spaniards* more, would have extended their Conquests much farther, if *Almagro* had not taken a Resolution of returning to *Peru*, to take Possession of his Government of *Cusco*, which he was now assured belonged to him, by Virtue of the Emperor's Commission, which *John de Harada* brought him, when he joined the Marshal with the Recruits above-mentioned.

THIS Commission, it seems, conferred on *Almagro* the Government of such Provinces in *Peru*, as lay South of those granted to *Pizarro*, for the Space of 200 Leagues: And as *Cusco* was above 300 Leagues South of the Equator, which was the utmost Extent of *Pizarro*'s Govern-

ment, *Almagro*'s Friends were of Opinion, *PERU*. that *Cusco* belonged to him; and that it ought not to be tamely parted with, being the Capital City of the Empire, and so well situated to command the Southern Provinces. His Officers, therefore, were unanimous in their Opinion, that they should march back, and possess themselves of *Cusco*, after which all the Countries in the South would fall under their Dominion of course.

THE Resolution, therefore, being taken of returning to *Peru*, the next Thing to be considered was, which Way they should march; and both *Spaniards* and *Indians* had suffered so much in their Passage over the Mountains, that it was unanimously determined to take the Way of the Plain by the Sea-Side, and to provide as well as possible against the Want of Water; *Indians* were sent before to open and cleanse the Wells in the great Desert, that had been choaked up with Sand during the Civil Wars, and to draw Water for the *Spaniards*, which might stand some Time in Calabash Bowls and Goat-Skins to settle and purify; for these Waters, it seems, were thick and unwholesome, and scarce drinkable, when first drawn.

AND as there was no Enemy to be expected in this Country, it was resolved to march in small Parties over this Desert, that they might be more easily supplied with Water and Provisions in their March: However, with all these Precautions, says my Author, the Hardships the *Spaniards* suffered in this scorching Desert, being upwards of 200 Miles Extent, was little inferior to what they sustained on the frozen Mountains, of which the *Spaniards* give us many surprizing Relations; particularly they tell us, that *Geronimo de Alderette*, being Governor of *Chili* many Years afterwards, and observing that those Mountains, at certain Seasons of the Year were clear of Snow, made a Journey over them in Search of the Plate and rich Baggage that had been lost there when *Almagro* passed it; and that they found there a Negro leaning against a Rock, holding a Horse by the Reins, both of them having been frozen to Death; and that they

PERU. stood upon their Feet, dried and stiff, as if their Skins had been stuffed with Straw. But I must leave *Almagro* on his March over the great Desert, which lies between *Chili* and *Peru*, and observe what happened in the mean Time at *Cusco*.

THE Inca *Manco Capac* observing that the Marquis *Pizarro* only gave him the Title of Inca, or Emperor, and that in Reality he had very little Command even in the Capital City of *Cusco*, where he resided, put the Marquis in mind of his Promise of restoring him to his Empire, and performing the Capitulations that had been agreed on between them; but *Pizarro* put him off from Time to Time, telling him, he must wait with Patience till he heard that those Capitulations were ratified by his Sovereign the Emperor of the *Romans*, which he expected to receive every Day by his Brother *Ferdinando*, and was going to *Lima* in Hopes of meeting him there; desiring, that the Inca, during his Absence, would reside in the Castle, and not stir from thence. The Inca, finding they would make him Prisoner by Force, if he did not voluntarily submit to this Confinement, disguised his Resentment, and immediately went to the Castle, declaring, that he should chearfully submit to any Thing the *Spaniards* apprehended to be for their Advantage, since they were pleased to acknowledge his Title to the Empire.

BUT the *Indians* were far from taking this Imprisonment of their Emperor patiently, they only waited for a favourable Conjunction to obtain his Liberty, and revenge themselves on the *Spaniards*, which was offered them not long after; for *Ferdinando Pizarro* returning from *Spain* with his Brother's new Commission, and the Patent for the Title of Marquis, brought some Orders with him that were not acceptable to the Marquis or his People; particularly he informed them, that the Emperor expected they should be accountable to him for all the Treasure they had received as the Ransom of *Atabilipa*, his Imperial Majesty alone being entitled to it, or at least, that they should raise him a good round Sum, and send over to *Spain* in Lieu of it;

but the Marquis and his Officers replied, PERU. this was neither reasonable nor possible:

As they had hazarded their Lives, and made a Conquest of the Country at their own Expence, without any Charge to his Imperial Majesty, they ought to reap the Fruits of their Labour; and besides, that Money had been long since spent in supporting the Conquest, building Towns, and planting Colonies, to preserve what they had gained, which would all redound to the Honour and Profit of his Majesty, who by that Means was confirmed and established in the Sovereignty of that rich Country: And *Ferdinando Pizarro* representing, that his Imperial Majesty was in great Distress for Money, having exhausted his Treasury in his Wars against the *Turks*, his Expedition to *Tunis*, &c. and that he had promised him a Supply from *Peru*, which, the Court of *Spain* were apprized, abounded with Gold and Silver; the Marquis replied, it was not to be expected a Country so lately conquered, and not yet settled, should do more than maintain itself, and therefore he must not insist on the Soldiers refunding their Spoils, but find out some other Way to perform his Promises to his Imperial Majesty. Whereupon *Ferdinando* desired his Brother would confer on him the Government of the Capital City of *Cusco*, and he did not doubt but he should soon have it in his Power to raise a Sum of Money to gratify the Court of *Spain*; which the Marquis consenting to, his Brother *Ferdinando* immediately repaired to his Government of *Cusco*; where observing that several Officers had been greatly enriched by Presents *Manco* Inca had made them, in order to be kindly used, he applied himself also to the Inca, giving him to understand, that he would be restored to his Dominions, and all his Demands granted, if he could procure a considerable Sum for the Court of *Spain*; and suffered the Inca to come out of the Castle to his Palace in the City again, and to be treated with the Honours of a Sovereign Prince. Whereupon the Inca sent Expresses to several Parts of his Dominions, directing them to bring him their usual Tribute of Gold and Silver Plate, as the most

PERU. most probable Means of delivering him out of the Hands of the *Spaniards*. Accordingly a great deal of Treasure was brought in, which the Inca presented to *Ferdinando Pizarro*, who still entertained him with Promises of restoring him to his Empire, in Hopes of drawing more Treasure from him: But the Inca finding he was still in a Manner a Prisoner, and not suffered to stir out without a Guard of *Spaniards*, concluded they intended him no Good, but that as soon as they had squeezed what they could out of him, would put him to Death, as they had done the Inca *Atahualpa*: He was perpetually meditating therefore how he might deceive the Deceivers, and get out of the Hands of his treacherous Keepers, and at last hit upon the following Stratagem. He informed *Ferdinando Pizarro*, that in the Valley of *Yuca*, two or three Leagues distant from *Cusco*, where the Incas Bowels used to be interred when their Bodies were embalmed, there were several rich Tombs, and in one of them a Statue of solid Gold of one of his Ancestors, as big as the Life, which he believed he could find if he might be permitted to go thither with his usual Guard of *Spaniards*, for he could not direct any one to it without going in Person. This being a Prize which the Governor *Ferdinando* had set his Heart upon, he consented that the Inca should go thither with a *Spanish* Guard, having no Suspicion of a general Conspiracy to rescue the Prince out of his Hands; for neither the Inca nor any of his Subjects had yet discovered the least Uneasiness at the Tyranny of the *Spaniards*, how insupportable soever: But *Manco* Inca, having ordered several Thousand *Indians* to rendezvous on the adjacent Mountains on a Day prefixed, and having obtained Leave of the Governor to resort to the Valley of *Yuca*, and remain there till the Evening, he found Means to escape from his Guard, and get to his Forces in the Mountains; and the Night coming on, he was conducted before Morning beyond the Reach of the *Spaniards*, who, instead of getting the Golden Statue they expected, lost a much more valuable Prize, and were

within an Ace of losing all their Conquests. PERU.

THE Inca being now at Liberty, and having summoned a Council of his Nobility and Generals, represented the Treachery and Perfidiousness of the *Spaniards*, who performed none of their Articles or Capitulations; but had, on the contrary, imprisoned and laid him in Irons in the Castle of *Cusco*. He said he had been long apprized of their Falseness and Treachery, observing how they divided the Lands of *Peru* among themselves, both in the Territories of *Cusco* and *Lima*, from whence it was evident they had no Intention to restore his Empire; and if he had dissimulated a Compliance with their Measures, it was only for the Security of his Person, and that he might one Day be in a Condition to assert his own and his Country's Rights: And as he was now determined to vindicate their Liberties by Force of Arms, he desired they would assist him with their Advice at this great and important Crisis, that the War with these cruel and ungrateful Strangers might be carried on to Advantage, without whose Expulsion, they were now convinced, they could never expect to enjoy any Thing they had in Quiet: If they suffered him or his Subjects to live, they must be Slaves to these Usurpers, a State more to be dreaded than Death itself.

AN Insurrection being thus resolved on, Expresses were dispatched to every Province of the Empire, requiring the respective Governors and Officers to raise what Forces they could, and in one Day endeavour to surprize the *Spaniards*, in their Quarters; and three great Armies were accordingly assembled in an Instant, one whereof was intended to cut off *Almagro* and his Forces in *Cbili*; a second invested the City of *Lima*; and the third, consisting of 200,000 Men, commanded by *Manco* Inca in Person, attacked the City of *Cusco*, took the Castle, and drove the *Spaniards* into the grand Square, in the Middle of the Town; but here the Artillery being pointed to the several Streets, mowed them down by Hundreds, and the Horse

PERU. Horse charging them while they were in this Confusion, the *Indians* were forced to retire to the Castle, having first set fire to the greatest Part of the City, and burnt it, except the Temple of the Sun, the Convent of select Virgins, and some other publick Buildings the *Spaniards* remained possessed of: But notwithstanding the *Spanish* Horse and Artillery were always too hard for the *Indians*, yet as the latter were Masters of the open Country, and could cut off their Provisions from Time to Time, the *Spaniards* must have been reduced in a short Time, if they had not been joined by great Numbers of the Common People of *Peru*, who being Slaves to the rest, adhered to the *Spaniards* in these Wars; whereby they did not only obtain their Freedom, and gain the Superiority of their Masters, but shared the Plunder of their Estates and Fortunes with the Christians. Without the Assistance of these *Indian* Slaves, the *Spaniards* could never have made a Conquest of *Peru*, with the small Force they had there. But now Liberty being proclaimed to all the Vassal *Indians* that would join the *Spaniards*, they resorted to the Assistance of the Besieged in such Numbers, that the Inca's Troops were entirely driven out of *Cusco* again, and even out of the Castle; in the storming of which, however, *John Pizarro*, Brother to the Marquis, lost his Life.

THE Siege, or rather Blockade, of *Cusco* continued nine or ten Months, in which the *Indians* were so remiss, or so unable to resist the *Spaniards*, united with their Vassals, that the Christians made Excursions to a very great Distance, and brought in several Thousand Head of Cattle, with all Manner of Provisions: Nor did the Inca ever think fit to make any further Attempts upon the City, but contented himself with surprising some small Parties of the *Spaniards* now and then, from whom having taken their Horses and Armour, and being instructed by some of their Prisoners how to make Use of them, the *Peruvians* were seen sometimes charging the Christians with their own Weapons.

THE Marquis *Pizarro*, who was at his new City of *Lima* at this Time, finding all Communication and Intercourse on a sud-

den cut off with the City of *Cusco*, suspected **PERU.** there was some Mischief intended, and was soon after informed by the *Yanacunas*, or *Indian* Slaves, in the *Spanish* Interest, that *Cusco* was actually invested, and that the *Indian* Generals were marching with another Army to besiege *Lima*. Whereupon he immediately dispatched Expresses to *Panama*, *Mexico*, *Nicargua*, and *Hispaniola*, for a Re-inforcement of Troops to prevent the Loss of *Peru*. He commanded also all the Detachments he had sent out to extend his Conquests, to return and join him in Defence of *Lima*; and at the same Time ordered a Body of 100 Horse and Foot, under the Command of his Cousin *Diego Pizarro*, to march towards *Cusco* and get Intelligence in what Condition his Brothers, and the Garrison he had left in that Capital, were.

THE *Indians* permitted this Detachment to march unmolested, till they had advanced sixty or seventy Leagues in their Way to *Cusco*; but having drawn them at length into a narrow Passage, between the Rocks and Mountains, they rolled down great Stones upon them, which so disordered the *Spaniards*, that they were all killed or made Prisoners by the *Indians*. Two or three Parties more, that were sent out successively to get Intelligence, met with the like Misfortune, insomuch that, it is said, between 300 and 400 *Spaniards* were cut off in this Manner, besides as many more who were dispersed, at the Mines, or at their Plantations about the Country; imagining that the *Indian* would have tamely submitted to their Usurpation, and never have made an Attempt to recover their Liberties, notwithstanding the Oppressions they suffered.

NOR did the *Indians* only defend the Passes in the Mountains, but being flushed with this Success, advanced to the very Walls of *Lima*, which they blocked up for a considerable Time, though they could not take it. The *Spanish* Horse were always too hard for them, when they sallied out into the Plains about that City and the Artillery upon the Walls obliged them, in a short Time, to remove to a greater Distance: However, they still continued

P E R U. **U**ntil the Blockade of *Lima*, where I shall leave them at present, and enquire after *Almagro*, whom we left in the Sandy Desert of *Atacama*, in his Return from *Cbili*. *Manco Inca*, it seems, had dispatched Expresses as far as *Cbili*, to acquaint his Subjects with his Design of throwing off the *Spanish* Yoke, requiring them to rise, and fall upon those Foreigners, and endeavour to expel them: He acquainted also his Brother *Paulla*, the High-Priest, and the rest of the *Indians*, who marched with *Almagro* into *Cbili*, with his Intentions, whereupon the High-Priest left *Almagro's* Camp privately, and returned to the Inca *Manco Capac*, who was then encamped before *Cusco*.

When *Manco Inca* heard of the Approach of *Almagro*, he thought fit to quit the Siege of *Cusco*, and retire with a small Part of his Troops to the Mountains of the *Andes*, ordering the rest of his Forces to disperse, and return to their Dwellings; for as he was not able to drive the *Spaniards* out of *Cusco*, when they were not 200 Men, he despaired of doing it after they should be joined by the 500 *Spaniards* which *Almagro* had under his Command: Nay, he determined, it is said, at this Time, to abandon the Government, and lead a private Life; for he heard his Army before *Lima* was also repulsed; that fresh Supplies of *Spaniards* arrived there every Day from *Mexico* and *Panama*; and that the Marquis *Pizarro* was about to send another Body of *Spaniards* to join with those already in *Cusco*: But had he known what Feuds and Divisions there were among the *Spanish* Generals, he would surely have suspended that Resolution a little longer, and some of his Officers, they say, advised that Prince to wait with Patience, and foment those Divisions among the *Spaniards*, for the weakest Side would probably invite the *Indians* to their Assistance, and give them an Opportunity of re-establishing their Inca upon his Throne. To whom, it is said, the Inca replied, He was not ignorant of the Misunderstandings among the *Spanish* Generals, but as long as they saw such Armies of *Indians* on Foot, he was confident they would lay aside their private

Quarrels, and all unite to maintain their **P E R U.** Footing in his Dominions: And that the disbanding his Forces was the readiest Way to divide these rapacious Foreigners, who would fall out about their Plunder, and the Division of the Lands they had usurped, when they imagined themselves secure, and saw no Enemy in the Field; and when they had weakened their Forces by Civil Dissensions and Encounters with each other, then the *Indians* might assemble again, and attack them with more Success than they could hope for at present; but upon whatever Motives *Manco Inca* proceeded, certain it is, he commanded all his Subjects, about this Time, to quit the Sieges of *Cusco* and *Lima*, and return to their respective Dwellings.

And now *Almagro* being arrived before the Walls of *Cusco*; and finding the *Indians* drawn off, sent a Summons to Don *Ferdinando Pizarro*, the *Spanish* Governor, to deliver up that Capital to him, as being included in that Grant the Emperor *Charles V.* had made him. But *Ferdinando* answered, He held that City by Virtue of a Commission from his Brother the Marquis, and should not deliver it up to any Man without his Orders, especially as he knew it to be within the Limits of his Brother's Government, and immediately proceeded to put the Place in a Posture of Defence, in order to prevent a Surprise; but Part of the Garrison being Friends to *Almagro*, and holding a Correspondence with him, introduced his Forces into the Town at Midnight, and *Ferdinando* and *Gonzalo Pizarro*, were surprized in their Beds, and made Prisoners; whereby *Almagro* became possessed of *Cusco*, with little or no Bloodshed; and most of the Troops, which had served the *Pizarros*, entered into his Pay.

In the mean Time, the Marquis *Pizarro* hearing no News from his Brothers at *Cusco*, and concluding all the Parties he had hitherto sent to re-inforce them, had been cut off by the *Indians*, determined to send such a Body of Troops thither as should be able to force their Way against all the Opposition the *Indians* could make; and having assembled 500 *Spanish* Horse

PERU. and Foot, gave the Command of them to Don *Alonso de Alvarado*, with Orders to march with all Expedition to *Cusco*. *Peter de Lerma* was ordered also to march with this Detachment as a private Captain of a Troop of Horse, though he was an older Officer than *Alvarado*, and had done great Service in those Wars, which so disgusted *de Lerma*, that he, from this Time, meditated the Ruin of the Enterprize, as is supposed by the *Spanish* Writers.

ALONZO de Alvarado continuing his March with the utmost Diligence, most of the *Indians* that were pressed to carry his Baggage, amounting to upwards of 5000, perished in the first Part of the Journey, either by the intolerable Fatigue, being loaded and driven beyond their Strength, or starved for Want of Food, of which their Lords the *Spaniards* took but little Care to provide them; insomuch that *Alvarado* was forced to halt, till he could press some Thousands more of the *Indians*, to supply the Places of those he had lost.

ALMAGRO receiving Intelligence at *Cusco*, that Don *Alonso de Alvarado* was advancing to that City, sent some *Spaniards* of Quality to him to represent, that *Cusco* belonged to his Government, according to the Division the Emperor had made of *Peru*, between him and the Marquis *de Pizarro*, and therefore advised him to retire to *Lima* again, till he and the Marquis should adjust the Limits of their respective Governments: But *Alvarado* was so far from entertaining any pacifick Thoughts, that he made all the Gentlemen Prisoners, that were sent to treat with him. Whereupon *Almagro* took the Field, constituting Don *Orgonnes* his Lieutenant-General; and having made a Party of *Alvarado's* Horse Prisoners, understood by them, that great Part of his Troops were better affected to him, than they were to the *Pizarros*; particularly, he understood that *Peter de Lerma*, with a great many of his Friends, would desert *Alvarado* the first Opportunity.

He advanced, therefore, as far as the Bridge of *Abancay*, on the other Side whereof *Alvarado* lay encamped, so that

there was nothing but a small River that parted their Forces; they remained quiet, however, without attempting to attack each other all Day; but in the Night-Time, *Orgonnes* fording the River, at the Head of *Almagro's* Horse, put *Alvarado's* Forces into great Confusion, and giving *Peter de Lerma*, and the rest of their Friends, by this Means, an Opportunity to join them, *Almagro* gained an easy Victory, with very little Bloodshed, making Don *Alonso de Alvarado* his Prisoner, with whom he returned in Triumph to *Cusco*. This Battle was fought the 12th of July, 1537.

ALMAGRO, after the Battle, marched with 500 *Spanish* Horse and Foot, and some thousand *Indians*, towards the Valley of *Chinca* on the Sea-Coast, taking with him his Prisoner *Ferdinando Pizarro*; but he left *Gonzalo Pizarro* and *Alonso de Alvarado* Prisoners in the City of *Cusco*.

IN the mean Time, the Marquis *de Pizarro* hearing no News from *Alonso de Alvarado*, and imagining the *Indians* might have possessed themselves of the Passes in the Mountains, and thereby cut off his Communication with that General, marched in Person, at the Head of 300 or 400 *Spaniards*, towards the Mountains to get Intelligence; and after some Days March, received Advice, that the *Indians* had raised the Siege of *Cusco*: That *Almagro* was returned from *Chili*, had possessed himself of that Capital, and made his Brothers *Ferdinando* and *Gonzalo* Prisoners; and, that his other Brother *John Pizarro* was killed during the Siege of *Cusco*; and a Day or two after had News brought him of the Defeat of Don *Alonso de Alvarado*. Whereupon he thought fit to retire again to *Lima*, and fortify himself there, till he should receive a Re-inforcement of Troops, which he expected every Day from *North America*; and to divert *Almagro* from taking Advantage of his present Weakness, and putting his Brothers to Death, he dispatched several *Spaniards* of Quality to attend him, and offer him any Terms he should insist upon, to procure his Brothers Liberty: But, according to some Historians, he had no Intention to observe any Treaties with *Almagro* any longer than he

PERU. he should be in a Condition to break them with Advantage. These Commissioners arriving at *Almagro's* Camp, he refused, at first, to be amused by any fallacious Treaties; told them he would order Commissioners to treat with those of the Marquis on the Frontiers of their respective Governments, and continued his March as far as *Nasca*, within forty Leagues of *Lima*, where he heard that *Gonzalo de Pizarro*, *Alonso de Alvarado*, and 100 Spanish Prisoners more, whom he left behind him, had made their Escape from *Cusco*. Whereupon *Orgonez* again pressed him to put *Ferdinando Pizarro* to Death, but he still refused it; and having planted a Colony near the Coast of the South-Sea, in the Vale of *Chinca*, he sent Commissioners to treat with the Marquis; but either by the Order of the Marquis, or without, these Commissioners were seized, and made Prisoners by one of his Generals, and their Dispatches broke open; which being represented to the Marquis as a great Outrage, he denied his having any Knowledge of it, ordered the Commissioners to be set at Liberty, and their Effects restored them, proposing an Interview with *Almagro*, in the Field, with only twelve Horsemen to attend each of them; which *Almagro* agreeing to, contrary to the Advice of his Generals, was very near falling into an Ambuscade that *Gonzalo Pizarro* had laid for him; of which receiving some Notice, while he was at the Conference with the Marquis, he made his Escape with some Difficulty.

THE Marquis, however, pretended, that he had no Intention to surprize *Almagro*, and that he had been misinformed, and Commissioners were agreed on to adjust their Differences.

It seems, the Bishop of *Panama*, in *Terra Firma Proper*, had been appointed, in the Year 1536, by the Emperor, to go to *Lima*, and settle the Limits between the *Pizarros* and *Almagro's* Governments, being directed to assign *Pizarro* all that Part of *Peru*, extending from the Equator to Southward 270 Leagues; and to *Almagro*, 200 Leagues more to commence where

Pizarro's Government ended; but *Pizarro* PERU. apprehending then that *Cusco* belonged to the Division which was allotted to *Almagro*, kept him ignorant of the Emperor's Grant, and perswaded *Almagro* to undertake the Expedition to *Chili*, above mentioned; and when the Bishop arrived at *Lima*, dissuaded him from taking that tedious Journey to *Cusco*, to execute his Commission; whereupon the Bishop returned to *Panama* without doing any Thing; but *Almagro*, on his Return from *Chili*, finding how he had been abused by the *Pizarros*, who had usurped Part of his Government, surprized the City and Castle of *Cusco*, and made *Ferdinando* and *Gonzalo Pizarro* Prisoners, as has been related already.

ARBITRATORS being again chosen to settle the Limits between the two Generals, and not being able to come to any Agreement, Father *Bovadilla* was made Umpeir of their Difference, who thought fit to allot the Capital City of *Cusco* to the Marquis *Pizarro*; against which Award, *Almagro* appealed to the Council of the *Indies*, and resolved to maintain by Force, what he was possessed of, till he should receive the Determination of that Council.

WHEREUPON the Marquis, in order to procure his Brother *Ferdinando's* Liberty, pretended he was content that both Parties should keep what they were possessed of, till the Court of *Spain* should determine otherwise; and that he would furnish *Almagro* with a Ship, by which he might send over his Commissioners to *Spain*, to manage his Cause there: And upon these Terms, *Almagro* consented to set *Ferdinando Pizarro* at Liberty.

THE Marquis having obtained what he wanted, viz. his Brother's Liberty, and a great Supply of Troops from *North America*, sent an Herald to *Almagro*, requiring him to deliver up *Cusco* to him and all his Conquests in *Peru*, insisting, that his (*Pizarro's*) Government extended from the Equator to the Streights of *Magellan*: And upon *Almagro's* refusing to resign his Government, immediately declared War against him, sending his Brothers *Ferdinando* and *Gonzalo*

PERU. *Gonzalo* at the Head of 700 *Spanish* Horse and Foot to surprize the City of *Cusco*, in the Absence of *Almagro*; of which that General receiving Intelligence, marched with the utmost Diligence, to reach that City before them; though it is said, his General *Orgonnes* again advised him to turn back and attack the City of *Lima*, now the Garrison was so much diminished; observing, that if he once possessed himself of that City, the Recruits that came from *North America*, would all join his Troops, and soon make him superior to his Competitor, of which *Almagro* was sufficiently convinced; but absolutely refused to encroach upon that Government, which had been granted to the Marquis by his Sovereign. He continued, therefore, his March towards *Cusco*, and being better acquainted with the Country than the *Pizarros*, and his Troops more used to that Climate, got between the Enemy and *Cusco*, when Advice was brought him, that most of the *Spaniards*, under the Command of the *Pizarros* being lately come from *Spain*, were fallen sick in the Mountains, and that if he would return back and fall upon them, they would easily be defeated; and of this Opinion was *Orgonnes*, and several other Officers; but whither *Almagro* did not credit this Advice, or imagined he should have a greater Advantage of the Enemy if they laid Siege to *Cusco* with so small an Army, he continued his March thither: and it is highly probable, that the *Pizarros*, would never have been able to have taken *Cusco*, if *Almagro* had remained within those Walls upon the Defensive, especially as the *Pizarros* had no Cannon with them, and the Garrison would have been almost as numerous as the Besiegers: But the Officers under *Almagro* confiding in the Bravery and Experience of their Forces, waved all the Advantages they had in their Walls, and no sooner heard the Enemy approach, but they prevailed on their old General *Almagro*, contrary to his own Opinion, to suffer them to march out and give the *Pizarrists* Battle; and *Almagro* being very old and infirm, was carried on a Couch into the Field, rather to see the Battle, than

command in it, having constituted *Orgonnes* his General. PERU.

THE first Oversight the *Almagrians* committed, it is said, was in attacking the *Pizarrists*, when they were drawn up among the Salinas or Salt-Pits, where their Horse, in which they had the Superiority, could be of little or no Use to them: They were much deceived also, it seems, in the Forces they were to engage, and in their Arms; for they imagined they were most of them new raised, undisciplined Men, and no better armed than themselves: Whereas they had been bred up in *Flanders*, the best School of War in that Age, and consisted chiefly of Musketers, of which there were but very few in *Almagro's* Army. But the greatest Misfortune was, their General *Orgonnes* being wounded by a Musket-Shot in the Beginning of the Battle, when he was engaged with *Ferdinando Pizarro*, the Enemy's General, and had unhorsed him: The personal Courage of *Orgonnes* contributed much to the Loss of the Day; for he was engaged in this single Combat, when he should have been giving his Orders, and commanding the Army; and the *Almagrians* imagining he was dead, thought of nothing but a Retreat; *Almagro*, himself fled to the Castle of *Cusco*; and the *Pizarrists* entering the City, Pell-Mell, with the Fugitives, the Slaughter was very great; *Orgonnes* and *Pedro de Lerma* being covered with Wounds, were killed after Quarter given them, and a great many Officers more upon private pique and Resentment; no Wars being so cruel, as those between Countrymen and exasperated Friends; but poor old *Almagro* was taken Prisoner, and reserved to be murdered by the Forms of Law.

AFTER he had remained Prisoner some Months in *Cusco*, the Lawyers were employed to draw up Articles against the old General; the principal whereof were, That he had seized on *Cusco* by Force: That he had entered into a secret Treaty with the Inca: That he had encroached on the Government, granted to the Marquis by the Emperor: That he had broken his Articles with the Marquis, and fought two

Battles

PERU. Battles with the Emperor's Forces, under the Command of the Marquis, the one at the Bridge of *Abancay*, and the other at the *Salinas*; and his Enemies sitting in Judgment on him, he was capitally convicted, and condemned to die, though he appealed to the Emperor, and applied in very moving Terms to *Fernando Pizarro* to save his Life: He bid him remember that he had spared his Life, and ever refused to put to Death any of his Relations, on Account of the Friendship between him and the Marquis; that he would do well also to remember how instrumental he had been in enabling his Brother to make those Conquests, and raising him to the Honours he possessed; desired the *Pizarros* would consider he was an old gouty Man, who could not live many Years, and suffer him therefore, after the innumerable Hardships and Hazards he had sustained, to die a natural Death; but the *Pizarrists* looking upon their old Companion, and Fellow-Soldier, as the only Obstacle to their Glory, and believing by his Death they should obtain the sole Dominion of *Peru* without a Rival, they were deaf to his Intreaties; and having ordered him to be strangled privately in Prison, they afterwards caused his Head to be cut off, on a Scaffold in the great Square of *Cusco*: His Body lay all Day exposed almost naked on the Scaffold, his Friends not daring to bury him, lest they should incur the Displeasure of the merciless *Fernando Pizarro*, and his Enemies not thinking it worth While to give themselves any Trouble about his Funeral; towards the Evening a poor Negro, who had been slave to the Deceased, brought a coarse Sheet, and with the Help of some *Indians*, who had been Servants likewise to that General, wrapped up the Corps, and carried it to the Church of the *Mercedes*, where the Friars buried him under the High Altar.

THE Death of *Almagro* did not long remain unrevenged. The Marquis was assassinated in his Palace, at *Lima*, at Noon Day, in 1541, by the Friends of the deceased *Almagro*, and the natural Son of that General proclaimed their Prince.

VOL. II. N^o 105.

THE Characters the *Spaniards* have given us of these two enterprizing Gentlemen, *Don Francis Pizarro*, and *Don Diego Almagro*, the Elder, who subdued *Peru*, are as follows.

THEY were both basely born, and had very mean Education, neither of them being able to write or read. *Gamara* relates, that *Francis Pizarro* was the Son of *Gonzalo Pizarro*, a Captain in the Province of *Navarre*; that his Mother laid him in a Church Porch, and he sucked a Sow several Days, till another Nurse was provided for him; and that when he grew up, he was employed in keeping Swine, and having lost some of them one Day, he was afraid to return Home; whereupon he went in the Company of Strollers to *Seville*, where he embarked for the *Indies*; and here, it seems, he was instrumental in fixing a *Spanish* Colony at *Darien*, attended *Vasco Nuncz de Balboa* in the Discovery of the *South-Sea*; and afterwards went with *Pedraria* from *St. Mary's* of *Darien* to *Panama*; and in these Expeditions, having enriched himself, he took up his Residence at the Town of *Panama*, where *Almagro*, who had raised his Fortune in the same Manner, likewise resided, and here they entered into that memorable Partnership with *De Leque* the Priest, which ended in the Reduction of that vast Empire of *Peru*, wherein they met with those inexhaustible Mines that have been already described, and became the most powerful Men, if not Monarchs, that ever appeared in that Part of the World, and superior in Wealth to the Richest of the Princes of *Europe*.

THEY carry the Parallel farther, and observe, that both *Almagro* and *Pizarro* were well advanced in Years before they undertook this Enterprize; that neither of them ever married, but had Children by their *Indian* Concubines; particularly they relate, that one of the Marquis's Concubines was the Daughter of the Emperor *Huana Capac*, and another, the Sister or Daughter of the Emperor *Atahualpa*; the last of which was baptized, and called *Donna Beatrice*.

7 T

THEY

PERU.

THEY observe also, that though both these Adventurers were in their Lives so immensely rich, they left nothing behind them; and that they were both, obscurely buried by their Servants. Give me Leave to observe further, that notwithstanding all their Failings and Imperfections, they must be allowed to be possessed of some great Virtues; such as Courage, Fortitude, Patience and Temperance, to a very great Degree, or they had never made themselves Masters of the Treasures of *Peru*. What Men would have struggled so many Years against Winds and Seas, endured the Extremities of Heat and Cold, traversed Countries almost impassable and impenetrable, and that when they were in a Manner totally deserted by their People, if they had not been endued with more than ordinary Patience? Though it must be confessed, that this Virtue seems, in a Manner, common to the Natives of *Spain*; and I am apt to think, scarce any other *European* Nation would have persisted with that indefatigable Industry, in prosecuting these Discoveries, and brought the *Americans* under their Power, if the *Spaniards* had not done it. It is true, they had some Advantage of the rest of *Europe*, in their Situation, not only as they lay the farthest Westward of any Country in the Old World, but that their Climate had a nearer Resemblance to that of *Peru*, than the Countries of their Northern Neighbours. They were also at that Time the greatest Maritime Power in *Europe*; but still I ascribe their Success more to their natural Patience and Perseverance, and their abstemious Way of Life, than to all their other Advantages.

THERE was one Thing these two Conquerors, as the *Spaniards* stile them, too well agreed in, and that was their ill Usage of the hospitable and defenceless *Indians*; who offering to submit to them, and to become Subjects to the Crown of *Spain*, were nevertheless treated as Enemies and Slaves, their Country taken from them, and their Persons worn out and destroyed by cruel Bondage; they were compelled to carry Burthens, to draw their Carriages, dig the Mines, and put upon other rigorous and intolerable Hardships;

infomuch, that they perished by Thousands, and whole Countries became in a Manner depopulated; but *Almagro* appearing the most compassionate of the two obtained the Character of a merciful Prince among the *Indians*; though no less than 10,000 *Indians*, who carried his Baggage, lost their Lives in his Expedition to *Chili*: However it came to pass, the Life of a Dog, or any Brute Animal, appears to have been more valued than that of an *Indian*; but this does not seem to be a Fault peculiar to these two Adventurers, or even to the *Spanish* Nation; for the whole Popish World at that Time were taught, that Heathens and Hereticks deserved no Mercy, and indeed were not entitled to enjoy any Thing in this World; but both their Persons and Estates were the Property of the first Christian that could seize them, especially if they were authorized to do it by the Pope, whose Bull the *Spaniards* had in their Favour: Infomuch, that the Christian Religion, which should have inspired these Adventurers with Tendernefs and Compassion, or at least have taught them Justice in their Commerce with the World, was made a Pretence for their turning Barbarians, and for all the Outrages, Cruelty and Injustice that Men could commit. Thus Men first divest themselves of their Humanity, under Pretence of Zeal for Religion, and then make that an excuse for becoming Wolves and Tygers, or even worse, Devourers of their own Species.

As for their Generosity, *Almagro* is said to be most eminent for this Virtue: But what Sort of Generosity is that where a Man only distributes the Plunder of those he has robbed and murdered, among the Villains his Accomplices?

BUT, to give the Devil his Due, before I conclude the Character of these two Adventurers, it must be acknowledged, that they were diligent in building Towns, planting Colonies, and introducing the Fruits, the Husbandry, the Manufactures of *Europe* into *Peru*. We find the most considerable Towns in *South America* were founded, or at least rebuilt by them, after the *Spanish* Manner; such as *Lima*, *Quito*, *Arequippa*, *Cusco*, *La Plata*, &c. But *Pizarro* was much the more considerable

Planter

PERU.

PERU. Planter, having assumed the Government of *Peru* to himself while he sent *Almagro* upon that hazardous Enterprize against *Chili*, in which he was in great Danger of perishing; probably *Almagro* was overreached by *Pizarro*, when he undertook that War. The *Pizarrists* imagine they had then happily got rid of him, and should never have seen him more: And though he had the good Fortune to survive, and get back to *Cusco*, they never ceased plotting against him till he fell a Sacrifice to their Malice and Ambition, which Piece of Barbarity was now retaliated upon them in Kind, and the Marquis lost his Life by a Conspiracy of the *Almagrians*, as old *Almagro* was destroyed by the Cabals of the *Pizarrists*.

THE young *Almagro* had scarce taken Possession of *Lima*, before *Vasco de Gama* was sent over to *Peru*, with the Emperor's Commission, to be Viceroy of all the Conquests on that Side, between whom, and young *Almagro*, a Battle was fought near *Cusco*: *Almagro* was defeated, and fled to *Cusco*, where he was made Prisoner by his own Troops, and delivered up to *Vasco de Gama*, who having tried him as a Traitor to his Sovereign, the Emperor caused him to be beheaded. There were some Insurrections afterwards, both of the *Pizarrists* and *Indians*, but they were all suppressed about the Year 1554, and the *Spaniards* remained sole Sovereigns of *Peru* as they are at this Day.



C H I L I.

CHILI.
Situation.

CHILI, the next of the *Spanish* Provinces in *South America*, is situate between 75 and 85 Degrees of West Longitude, and between 25 and 45 Degrees of South Latitude, bounded by *Peru* on the North, by *Patagonia* on the East, by another Part of *Patagonia* on the South, and by the *Pacifick* Ocean on the West; being 1200 Miles in length from north to South, and in some Places 600 Miles broad, but generally about 200 Miles wide.

THE Mountains are the *Cordeliros des Andes* and the *Sierras*, which run the whole Length of it on the East; but the Air is very different from that of *Peru*, lying without the Tropick of *Cancer*, and consequently more temperate and more variable: It is a plentiful and fruitful Country, producing Corn and Wine, almost all Manner of Fruits; and as rich in Gold, Silver and Copper as *Peru*, and some say affords more Gold than *Peru* does. Their Animals also are the same, and thrive much better; and their Traffick consists in transporting their Gold and Silver to the Northern Provinces; for which they receive in return from *Lima* and *Panama*,

the Merchandize both of *Europe* and *Asia*. **CHILI.** The only Sea that borders upon it, is that of the *Pacifick* Ocean; but this is not so pacifick here as it is on the Coast of *Peru*: There are frequently Storms on the Southern Part of it.

It is usually thrown into two grand Divisions, viz. *Chili Proper*, extending from 25 to 45 Degrees of South Latitude, and *Cuyo* or *Cuito*, lying East of the *Andes*, between 32 and 38 Degrees South Latitude.

THE chief Towns are, 1. *St. Jago*, the Capital of *Chili*, situate in 34 Degrees South Latitude, near the Ocean, at the Mouth of the River *Valperiso*, being surrounded by a fruitful Plain, and elegantly built, and Canals brought from the River through the principal Streets. This City was founded by the celebrated *Peter de Baldivia*, who reduced this Part of *Chili* to the Obedience of *Spain*, in 1541.

OTHER considerable Towns are *Coquimbo*, situate on a River of the same Name, about two Miles from the Sea, in 30 Degrees South Latitude. This Town also was founded by *Baldivia*, as was *Conception*, situate in

CHILI 37 Degrees South Latitude, and the Town of *Baldivia* in 40 Degrees South Latitude. The last is situated on a Peninsula, formed by two Rivers, which with the Islands before it, form one of the securest and most commodious Harbours in *Chili*, said to be a strong Place; but in the Opinion of Sir *John Narborough*, who viewed this Port by the Command of King *Charles II.* in 1670, in order to have made a Settlement here, the Town might easily have been taken. Near this Town is a great Deal of Gold Dust to be met with, which induced the *Dutch* to attempt the making a Settlement here; but they did not succeed; which was the Reason, probably, that the *English* thought it impracticable.

OTHER Towns of Note in *Chili* are *Imperial*, in 39 Degrees South Latitude; *Oserno* in 41 Degrees South Latitude; *Castro* on the Island of *Chiloe*, in 42 Degrees South Latitude; *Copiapo* in 26 Degrees; *Guasca* in 28 Degrees; *Anglo* in 38 Degrees; *Arauco* five Leagues North of *Anglo*, Capital of a Valley inhabited by the bravest People of *Chili*, who long defended their Country against the *Spaniards*; and when they were reduced by the irresistible *Spanish* Artillery, not being able to bear the Insults and Oppressions of their Conquerors, had Recourse to Arms again, took the Towns and Fortresses that had been erected to keep them in Subjection; made General *Baldivia* Prisoner, and put him to Death, by pouring, as it is said, melted Gold down his Throat.

THESE Towns were most of them built near the Sea-Coast; but there is another named *Villa Rica*, situated upon a Lake near the Foot of the *Andes*, in 40 Degrees South Latitude, which obtained its Name from the great Quantities of Grain found in the adjacent Country. This also was taken and razed by the Natives of *Chili*, in 1604, who put every Man to the Sword, not sparing the Priests or Monks, and carried the Women into Slavery, by Way of Retaliation for the numerous Ravages and Murders committed by the *Spaniards* on their Relations and Friends.

IN the Province of *Cuyo*, the other **CHILI** Division of *Chili*, the chief Towns are, *Cuyo* Province. *Towns.* 1. *Mendoza*, in 35 Degrees North Latitude, in a Pass of the Mountains of the *Andes*. 2. *St John de Frontiera*, situate on the Confines of *La Plata*; and, 3. *Oromante*, or *St. Lewis*, in 36 Degrees South Latitude.

THE chief Rivers are, 1. the *Salado*, Rivers, or *Salt-River*, which runs from East to West, along the Confines of *Peru*, which a merry Fellow relates, turned his Horse that drank of it into Salt. 2. *Copiapo*. 3. *Guasca*. 4. *Coquimbo*. 5. *Gavanuadore*. 6. *Ciapa*. 7. *Valparissa*. 8. *Mapoco*. 9. *Mantle*. 10. *Italta*. 11. *Bobio*. 12. *Imperial*; and, 13. *Baldivia*. All which run from East to West, and discharge themselves into the *Pacifick* Ocean, but falling precipitately from the Mountains, are not navigable much beyond their Mouths.

THE *Chilefians* do not live in Towns; but every Tribe extends itself on the Bank of some River in the Valleys between the Mountains, their Houses standing regularly, and at a Distance from each other; neither do they remain long in one Place, but remove for the Convenience of Pasture, and, as the Season of the Year requires, sometimes into the higher, and sometimes into lower Grounds, in which they do not find much Difficulty; for their Houses are all upon a Floor, slightly built of Wood, and consist of three or four Rooms only, which are so contrived, that they can be taken asunder, and removed one after another. Their Doors have neither Hinges, Locks, or Bolts, their Furniture being so mean, though they live in one of the richest Countries in the World, that they fear no Robberies: Their Beds are the Skins of Wild Beasts laid upon the Floor; a Block, or a Stone, serves them for a Pillow, and they lay a Coverlet or two over them, made of the Wool of their Country-Sheep. Their Dishes are of Wood, or made of some Calabash, or Gourd; which serves them also, instead of Pails and Pitchers. Earthen Pots they have to boil and stew their Meat in; a rough unhewn Block serves for a Seat, and another of the same Kind

CHILI. Kind for a Table, and their Lances, Swords, and other Arms, are the principal Ornaments of their Houses: This is to be understood of the *Indians* of the Province of *Chili Proper*; for those who inhabit *Cuyo*, and the Plains on the East Side of the Mountains of the *Andes*, are still less polished: Some of them live in Caves, and others, after the *Arabian* Way, are ever roving from one Part of the Country to another; and they may do this with great Ease, for they have no Houses at all, only a slight Tent made of the Skins of Beasts, to shelter them against the Rain and Sun; they have nothing to do, but to take up their Tent-Poles and Skins, whenever they are disposed to march.

THEY look upon it as a Sort of Imprisonment to be confined to one Place; and therefore have neither Houses, Gardens, Plantations, or Furniture, to clog or stop their Progress.

THE Liberty of wandering whither they please, is esteemed the greatest of all Earthly Blessings: Sometimes, say they, we are pleased with the Freshness of a River Side; and, weary of that, we resort to the Woods and Shades, and then again we remove to the open Campaign Country. All the Pleasure of Life is in Variety. In one Season we hunt; in another we are employed in Fishing; and in another we enjoy the Fruits of the Earth which are produced spontaneously; when these begin to fail in one Country, we resort to another. Wherever we happen to encamp, that is our Home. We have no more Fondness for one Place than another. We go where we will without leaving any Thing behind us we much regret or desire, which uses to torment those who have fixed Habitations, when they are forced to part with them or from them. We fear no ill News, having nothing to lose. Our Wives and Children are our only Treasure, and while we have these, we want nothing.

ACCORDING to Sir *John Narborough*, the *Chilefians* are of the middle Size, and strong limbed; of a tawny Complexion, and have long black Hair, exceeding harsh; their Features tolerably good; their

Teeth white and sound; active of Body, **CHILI.** but of a dejected Countenance. They agree with the rest of the *Americans* in pulling the Hair off their Chins and other Parts of their Bodies, as soon as it appears, with Tweezers or Nippers made of Shells. Their Women are moderately tall, slender, and well-shaped: They braid and curl their Hair frequently, letting it grow to a very great Length.

WHEN *Ovalle*, and other *Spanish* Writers tell us, that the *Chilefians* are very fair, it must be understood in comparison of those *Indians* that lie near the Equinoctial, and perhaps they may be fairer than some of the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*; but Sir *John Narborough*, who was an *Englishman*, esteemed them very tawny compared with his Countrymen.

As to those *Chilefians* who inhabit the Province of *Cuyo*, and the Plains of *Pampas* between the Mountains of *Andes*, and the *Atlantick* Ocean, these are People of a larger Stature than those of *Chili Proper*, and of a darker Complexion.

THE Men of *Chili Proper* wear a loose Garment made of the Wool of their Country Sheep, pretty full, and reaching down to their Knees, or lower, which is put on like a Surplice, not being open before, or on the Sides, and has no Sleeves. They have a Kind of open Drawers and Doublets, but no Shirts, any more than Shoes and Stockings, but wear a Kind of Buskin, or Half-Stockings on their Legs; and on their Heads, a stiff Hat or Cap, cocked up before like a Dragoon's Cap, the Crown of which is sometimes adorned with a beautiful Plume of Feathers, dyed Wool, or a Nosegay of Flowers.

THE Habits of the Women differ little from those of the Men, only they have no Covering on their Heads, but a Kind of Coronet of Wool, of several Colours, binds their Temples; their Hair is Part of it curled and braided, and the rest flows down their Backs to a great Length. The Women have also a Kind of Sash, with which they bind or swathe their Bodies from the Middle upwards, and when they go abroad, throw a Cloak or a mantle over all.

CHILI. ON Festivals their Cloaths are of the same Form, but finer and of more beautiful Colours; and as they adorn their Heads with Feathers or Flowers, their Necks are covered with Chains of beautiful Shells, or Precious Stones.

THE *Indians*, on the East Side of the *Andes*, in the Province of *Cuzo*, and the Plains of *Pampas*, are not near so well cloathed as those on the West. They are contented with Leaves to hide their Nudities, and the Skins of Beasts serve them for Cloaks or Mantles, which is all the Cloathing they wear, as far as I can learn, and their Ornaments are some glittering Trifles, which they hang upon their Lips, that are bored through for that Purpose, and rather disfigure than adorn their Faces, in the Opinion of Strangers.

REVOLUTIONS.

THE Form of Government among the *Chilefians* came pretty near that of the Patriarchal. Every Tribe or Family was governed by its respective Head, or Chief, who was succeeded by the eldest Son, or nearest Relation on his Decease. And when they were invaded, or had Wars with their Neighbours, they made Choice of the Man most famous for Courage and Military Skill for their General. As to that Part of the Country that was conquered by the Incas, the *Chilefians* were obliged to conform themselves to the Religion and Manners of the *Peruvians*, and their Emperors made no Difference between these and the rest of their Subjects.

DON *Diego de Almagro* was the first of the *Spanish* Generals, who, after the Reduction of *Cusco*, the Capital of *Peru*, undertook an Expedition against *Chili*, in which he was introduced by the Inca *Paulla*, who put him in Possession of that Part of it which was under the Dominion of the *Peruvian* Emperors, about the Year 1535, as has been already related in the History of *Peru*; after which *Almagro* subdued some of the more Southern Provinces of *Chili*, and probably would have extended his Conquests farther, if he had not been obliged to return to *Peru*, to make Head against the *Pizarros*, who had

formed a Design to deprive him of his **CHILI.** Share of that Province, and to have usurped the sole Dominion of all the Conquests the *Spaniards* had made to the Southward of the Equator.

VALDIVIA, or *Baldivia*, was the next *Spanish* Commander that attempted to extend their Conquests in *Chili*. He had served in the Wars of *Italy*, and was looked upon as one of the best Officers that went over to *America*, for which Reason he was made Choice of by the Marquis *Pizarro* to enlarge their Empire on that Side. *Valdivia* entered upon this Service in the Year 1540, and met with little Opposition from that Part of *Chili* which was subject to the Incas; but on his advancing farther, he was frequently encountered by the confederated *Caciques*. However, he penetrated as far as the Valley of *Mapocho*, which he found extremely fruitful, and well peopled. In this Valley, being eighty Miles in Circumference, and situated two Leagues to the Westward of the Mountains of *Andes*, he founded the City of *St. Jago*, in the Year 1541, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, and built a Castle for the Defence of it, and of the Gold Sands in the Neighbourhood, which he compelled the conquered *Indians* to work in; at which the *Chilefians* were so exasperated, that they raised Forces and attacked the Castle before it was well finished, and were very near carrying it; however, they were at length repulsed, and *Valdivia* acquainting the Viceroy of *Peru* with the State of his Affairs, received a Reinforcement of Troops from thence, under the Command of *John Baptista Pastene*. But still it appears, he was not strong enough to make any great Progress; and the *Indians* giving out that there were very rich Gold Mines in a certain Part of the Country, not far from *St. Jago*, drew a Detachment of his Forces (who went in search of them) into an Ambuscade, and cut off every Man of them, except their Commander and a Negro, who escaped to *St. Jago* by the Swiftnefs of their Horses: Whereupon *Valdivia* sent for another Reinforcement of Troops to enable them to advance against the *Chilefians*; and built the Town and Castle of *Coquimbo* or *Serera*

on

CHILI on a Bay of the Sea, in 30 Degrees South Latitude, to secure his Communication with *Peru*, and prevent the Supplies being cut off which he expected from thence.

IN the mean Time the Civil Wars breaking out in *Peru*, *Valdivia* was commanded thither with some of his Officers and Soldiers, and left his Conquests in *Chili* to the Care of his Lieutenant *Francisco de Villagra*; but the Rebels being defeated in *Peru*, *Valdivia* returned again to *Chili* with a good Body of Veteran Soldiers, who had served in those Wars. During the Absence of *Valdivia*, there happened a Misunderstanding between his Lieutenant, *Francisco de Villagra* and *Pedro Sanchez de Hoz*, to whom the King of *Spain* had granted the Government of the farther Part of *Peru* and *Chili*, and who with Reason therefore expected the Command of the Forces in *Chili* in the Absence of *Valdivia*; and indeed he had a Right to that Command before *Valdivia* himself, as he received his Commission only from the Marquis of *Pizarro*, who had no Authority in *Chili*; nor would *Don Sanchez* have submitted to *Valdivia's* taking upon him the Command of that Army, but upon Condition of his being put in Possession of the richest Part of *Chili*.

THIS *Valdivia* had agreed to, but his Lieutenant *Villagra*, taking an Opportunity to quarrel with *Sanchez* in the Absence of *Valdivia*, as has been intimated, made him Prisoner, and cut off his Head, whether by the Order of *Valdivia*, his Rival, or not, is uncertain; but he appeared very well pleased with the Fact when it was done, having thus got rid of a Man that had so much Colour to claim the best Part of his Conquest, and looked upon *Valdivia* himself as a Usurper.

WHILE the *Spaniards* were thus engaged in Civil Broils, both in *Peru* and *Chili*, the *Chilefians* made their Advantage of them, surprized the *Spanish* Garrisons of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo*, and putting them to the Sword, demolished both those Towns: And it was with Difficulty *Francisco de Villagra* defended himself in *St. Jago* itself till the Return of *Valdivia*, who bringing a good Army with him, restored his Affairs, drove the *Chilefians* from the Valleys

of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo* again, and rebuilt the Towns the *Indians* had destroyed there; after which he marched farther Southward, and having passed the River *Maypo*, subdued the *Promocas*, a warlike Nation, who had defended their Frontiers, not only against the *Peruvian* Emperors, but against the *Spaniards*, commanded by *Almagro*. He afterwards transported his Troops over the great Rivers *Maulle* and *Itata*, and observing an advantageous Situation on a Bay of the *South-Sea*, in 37 Degrees South Latitude, he founded a City there in the Year 1550, giving it the Name of *Conception*. But the *Chilefians*, enraged to see themselves thus bridled, and restrained of their Native Liberties by the Towns and Fortresses erected by the *Spaniards* in their Country, assembled in great Numbers, and harrassed the new City of *Conception* with repeated Attacks, killing a great many *Spaniards*, and endangering the Loss of their whole Army. *Valdivia*, however, finished the Fortification of that Town the latter End of the Year 1550, and having sent out a Party to discover the Country, advanced farther Southward in the Beginning of the Year 1551, bending his March towards the Plains of *Angol*; and having crossed the great River *Biobio*, founded the City of *Imperial* on a Hill, at the Confluence of two Rivers, in 39 Degrees South Latitude, four Leagues East of the *Pacifick* Ocean, and forty to the Southward of *Conception*.

THIS City stands in a fine fruitful Plain, inhabited, as the *Spaniards* relate, by four-score Thousand *Indians*, when they arrived there, a very peaceable Nation, that gave them no Disturbance while they were building the City; and suffered *Valdivia* to parcel out both their Persons and their Lands among his Followers without Opposition.

FROM hence he marched towards the Mountains of *Andes*, and sixteen Leagues to the Eastward of *Imperial*, laid the Foundation of a City, which he called *Villa Rica*, from the richness of the Mines he found there. And here the *Spanish* Historians take the Liberty of censuring the Conduct of their Hero, *Valdivia*, in endeavouring to grasp more than

he

C H I L I he could possibly hold with the few *Spanish* Forces he commanded. That brave People, they observe, had never been vanquished by the *Spaniards* in so many Encounters, if they had not been terrified and astonished at the firing their Artillery and Small Arms, which the *Indians*, at first, imagined to be real, and not artificial Thunder and Lightning; and that those who discharged them were rather God than Men. Their Horses, and the Men upon them, armed Cap-a-pee, seemed also invulnerable, not being able to pierce their Armour with their Spears and Darts, which rendered the *Spaniards* still more terrible. But the *Chilefians* being at length undeceived, and finding their Enemies to be but Men like themselves, notwithstanding the Disadvantage they had in the Want of Horses, Artillery and Armour, resolved to make another bold Push for the Recovery of their Liberties, being persuaded they should be able, by their Numbers and Courage, to expel these Strangers out of their Country, who had so unjustly enslaved them; in which they were not entirely mistaken, for the *Spaniards*, not considering that the Dread of their Arms and Horses was now worn off, grew remiss and negligent in Military Discipline, and attended more to the enriching themselves than to the securing their Conquests, which was attended with many ill Effects; for by compelling the *Indians* to dig in their Mines, they daily exasperated them more and more; and by assembling so many of them together at the Mines, gave them an Opportunity of forming Schemes, and executing them too, with better Success than they could have done, if they had remained dispersed in their respective Villages.

T H E *Araucans*, the bravest Nation of the *Chilefians*, had opposed the *Spaniards* with the greatest Success, but had been at last obliged to submit; and this being one of the most desirable Countries in *Chili*, *Baldivia*, in the Distribution of the Lands, had reserved this Valley for himself; and being sensible that the Natives were not to be kept under, unless by pure Force, he erected three Castles in this Valley,

and left Garrisons in them while he marched **C H I L I** farther Southward, and built the Town of *Valdivia*, as has been related, where finding still richer Mines, it is said, he employed 50,000 *Indians* in the working of them, and spent so much Time there in amassing Wealth, that the *Araucans*, taking Advantage of his Absence, engaged the whole Country in a Conspiracy against the *Spaniards*, and chose the celebrated *Cauptican* for their General.

V A L D I V I A receiving Intelligence of the intended Insurrection, returned in some Haste to the Valley of *Arauca*, where he found 13,000 or 14,000 of the Natives assembled in Arms, whom he charged with his Horse, and obliged them to retire into the Woods and Enclosures as often as they appeared, but was not in a Condition to disperse them entirely; they frequently rallied and attacked his Troops, and thus they continued to encounter him for several Days in a Sort of running Fight.

T H E *Chilefian* General, observing that his engaging the *Spaniards* with such Numbers only occasioned Confusion among the People, those in the Front frequently giving Way to the *Spanish* Cavalry, and disordering the rest of his Forces, before ever they were engaged, divided his Army into Battalions of 1000 Men each, ordering them to charge the Enemy by Turns. He represented to them, that the *Spaniards* were but 150 Horse, and that 1000 of his brave Countrymen might easily maintain their Ground for some Time against so small a Number, notwithstanding the Advantage the Enemy had in their Arms and Horses. However, he only desired they would make their utmost Effort. He had no Expectation that the first Battalion should gain the Victory, but when they found themselves obliged to retire, required them to take Care in their Retreat not to disorder the other Bodies, but rally themselves, and draw up in the Rear, that they might be ready for a second Charge; and the same Commands he gave to the Officers of the other Battalions.

In Pursuance of these Orders, the first Battalion engaged the *Spanish* Horse with great

CHILI. great Resolution, and having held them in Play some Time, leisurely retired, being succeeded by the second, and that by the third, and so on, till the *Spaniards* had continued the Engagement for seven or eight Hours without Intermission, and both Men and Horses began to faint with the Labours of the Day, or for want of Refreshment; which *Valdivia* too late observing, made a precipitate Retreat, ordering his Troops to take Possession of a Pass about a Mile from the Field of Battle, where he did not doubt he should be able to defend himself against all the Power of the Enemy. But a *Chilefian*, who had been Page to *Valdivia*, and baptized by the Name of *Philip*, (whose Indian Name was *Lautaro*) hearing his Master give Orders for their Retreat, deserted at that Instant to his Countrymen, and directed them to take Possession of the Pass before the *Spaniards* could arrive there. He bid them, says the Royal Historian *De-la-Vega*, make Use of the Advantages they had in their Hands, recover their Liberties, and rescue their Country from Destruction, by cutting off these Thieves and Usurpers, who had invaded it: And taking a Spear, charged his late Lord *Valdivia* at the Head of a Company of *Chilefians*, while another Detachment of the *Indians* secured the Pass as he directed them.

AND now the *Chilefians* seeing the *Spaniards* unable longer to resist their Attacks, pressed them on every Side, without giving them a Moment's Time to breath, who finding Death inevitable, called upon Jesus Christ, but more upon the Blessed Virgin and the rest of the Saints, to save them, but were all cut in Pieces on the Spot, except the General *Valdivia* himself, who was taken Prisoner while he was making his Confession to a miserable Priest in the same Circumstances, whom they killed immediately, but brought *Valdivia*, with his Hands bound behind him, before *Caupolican* the *Chilefian* General, who ordered him to be tied to a Tree, that he might be executed with more Ceremony than those that fell in the Battle. *Valdivia*, it is said, meanly begged his Life of the Conquerors, ad-

VOL. II. N^o 106.

CHILI. dressing himself chiefly to *Lautaro*, who was but a few Hours before his Slave. He promised, if they would spare him, to withdraw all the *Spanish* Forces out of *Chili*, and never more disturb their Peace, swearing, by all that was sacred, to perform his Promise; but the unrelenting Enemy was deaf to his Entreaties, even *Lautaro* observed, that it was Madness to trust to the Promises of a Captive, who would infallibly change his Note, if he was set at Liberty. Whereupon the General pronounced his Doom, though Authors differ about the Manner of his Execution. Some affirm, they poured melted Gold down his Throat, bidding him satisfy himself with that Metal, he so violently thirsted after. Others relate, that one of the *Indian* Caciques, not bearing to hear it debated, whether the Destroyer of their Country should live or die, beat out his Brains with a Club, without asking the General's Leave; and all the *Spanish* Writers agree, that they made Trumpets and Flutes of his Bones, and preserved his Skull, as a Memorial of that important Victory; which they celebrated by Feasting and Dancing after their Country Manner, and instituted publick Sports and Exercises, such as Running, Wrestling, and Leaping, to be observed annually in Memory of it; and expecting the *Spaniards* would give them another Visit, they encamped in some of their most inaccessible Woods and Mountains, and *Caupolican* constituted *Lautaro* his Lieutenant-General, for the Services he had done in the late Battle, finding him every Way qualified for that Post.

THE News of *Valdivia*'s Misfortune arriving at the City of *Conception*, his Lieutenant *Francisco de Villagra*, assembled the *Spaniards* that were dispersed in the several Provinces of *Chili*, and being joined by some Thousands of the *Indian* Allies, marched to the Valley of *Arauca*, to give Battle to *Caupolican*; but that General cunningly retired before him, till he found the *Spaniards* so far engaged in the Woods and Defiles, that their Horses could be of little Use to them. And then sending out Detachments to possess the

Passes

CHILI. Passes in their Rear, he boldly faced about, and attacked them in Front, ordering his Men not to stand to be shot at; but immediately to advance and come to a close Engagement, mixing themselves with the Enemy, whereby they avoided the Mischief they used to receive from their Fire-Arms at a Distance, and being much more numerous than the *Spaniards* and their Allies, by this Stratagem gained another memorable Victory, killing no less than 2500 *Spaniards* and *Indians* on the Spot. After which, *Lautaro*, with a Part of the *Chilean* Army, marched towards the City of *Conception*; and finding it abandoned by the *Spaniards*, set Fire to the Town, and demolished it.

LAUTARO afterwards laid Siege to the City of *Imperial*, but, the Winter coming on, was obliged to raise it, by the great Rains which fall at that Season; though the *Spaniards* ascribe their Deliverance to a Miracle, assuring us, that the *Virgin Mary* appeared visibly to the whole Army, over the City *Imperial*, and defended it against these Barbarians.

THE *Spaniards* afterwards rebuilt the City of *Conception*; but *Lautaro* drove them from thence a second Time; and observing that the *Chilean* Liberties would ever be precarious, while the *Spaniards* had any Footing in their Country, he assembled a great Army, and laid Siege to the Capital City of *St. Jago*, where, being unfortunately killed with an Arrow, the Siege was raised.

HOWEVER, the Governor of *Peru* apprehending all *Chili* would be lost, sent his Son *Don Garcia de Mendoza* with a powerful Reinforcement of Troops to suppress the *Araucans*, who were so fortunate, after several Encounters with various Success, to make their General *Caupolican* Prisoner, whom he put to Death, after he had persuaded him to declare himself a Christian. But this was far from putting an End to the War; the *Chileans* were determined to perish, rather than become Slaves to the *Spaniards*; and raising fresh Forces, attacked all their Colonies at once; some of which were taken and retaken several Times; and thus the War continued

to be carried on with great Obstinacy and **CHILI.** Cruelty for upwards of fifty Years, when it appears, by the *Spaniards* own Relation, that they were driven with great Slaughter from most of their Settlements in that Country.

THE Royal Historian, *Garcilasso de la Vega*, being then in *Spain*, informs us, that he received the following Relation of the Miseries of the *Spaniards* there, from an intimate Acquaintance, in two Letters, one of which was dated from *St. Jago* in *Chili* in the Month of *March*, Anno 1600, in which the Writer acquainted him, that about Break of Day, on *Wednesday* the 24th of *November*, 1599, 5000 *Indians*, whereof 3000 were Horse, and the rest Foot, seventy of them carrying Fire-Arms, and 200 of them in Armour (they had taken from the *Spaniards*) took the City *Imperial* by Surprise, being guided thither by a treacherous Spy, burnt and destroyed the whole Town, killing and taking 400 *Spaniards*, Men, Women, and Children.

AND in another Letter from *Chili*, in the Year 1604, the Writer tells us, That of the thirteen Cities, which were established in this Kingdom of *Chili*, the *Indians* had destroyed six, namely, *Valdivia*, *Imperial*, *Angol*, *Santa Cruz*, *Castro* in *Chiloe*, and *Conception*. They overthrew their Houses, dishonoured and profaned the Temples, obscured the Brightness of that Faith and Devotion which shined in those Parts, and what is worse, (says the Writer,) this Success hath encouraged and raised the Spirits of the *Indians* in such a Manner, that they are grown bold and confident, omitting no Opportunity or Advantage which may offer, to destroy our Cities and Monasteries, with Fire and Sword. They have learned also many Arts and Stratagems of War; for when they besieged the City of *Osorno*, and compelled the *Spaniards* to retire within their Works, they so straitened them, that they could receive no Sustenance, unless it were some small Quantities of the Seed of Herbs, and Leaves of Turneps, which too they were fain to fight for, and gain with the Point of the Lance. In one of the Sieges of this City, they broke the Images of Christ and

CHILI and our Lady, and other Saints, to the great Dishonour of God, which none, but his infinite Mercy and Patience could have suffered. In the last Siege which the *Indians* laid to this Place, they surprized the *Spaniards*, and killed the Centinels, and without any Opposition, entered and possessed themselves of the Town, exercising such Cruelty as was agreeable to the Barbarity of their Natures; for they butchered the Children and put the Women and Nuns in Chains, intending to carry them away in Slavery: But while they were thus busily employed in packing up and disposing their Booty, and plundering every where without Order, the *Spaniards* took Courage, and with that Opportunity fell upon them, and God assisting their Endeavours, they rescued their Wives and Nuns from their violent Hands; and with the Loss of some few, forced them to fly, and quit both their Prey and their City. The last Victory which the *Indians* obtained, was, when they took *Villarica* with great Effusion of *Spanish* Blood: They set Fire to the four Quarters of the Town, and killed the Friars of *St. Dominick*, *St. Francis*, and the *Mercedes*, with all the Clergy that were there, carrying all the Women away Captives, many of which were Ladies of Quality and Condition. And this was the Fate of that City, which was one of great Renown, and illustrious among the neighbouring Cities of that New World. Thus far proceeds the Relation of *Chili* in the Year 1604.

To which nothing can be said (says *De-la Vega*) but that these were Judgments which God, in his secret Providence, permits for the Chastisement of Mankind; not reflecting that these Calamities were no more than the *Spaniards* richly deserved, who had unjustly invaded their Country, and made Slaves of the Natives, without any Manner of Colour or Pretence.

THE *Chilefians* afterwards recovered several other Places from the *Spaniards*, and almost expelled them their Country, of which the *Hollanders* receiving Intelligence, from their *West-India* Company, in the Year 1642, fitted out a Squadron of Men

of War under the Command of Captain *Brewer*, and having put some Land-Forces on Board, ordered, them to sail to the Coast of *Chili*, and settle Colonies there; not doubting to possess themselves of some of the Gold Mines of that Country; for they concluded, that every People which were Enemies to the *Spaniards* would be well received by the *Chilefians*.

BREWER, the *Dutch* Commodore, set Sail with a Squadron of Men of War and Land-Forces on Board from *Holland*, the 6th of *November*, 1642, and arriving at *Fernambuco* in *Brazil*, then in Possession of the *Dutch*; on the 22d of *December*, set Sail again from thence with his Squadron, consisting of nine Men of War, on the 15th of *January*, 1642-3; and having passed the Streights of *La Maire*, and doubled *Cape-Horn*, arrived on the Coast of *Chili* on the 30th of *April*, 1643, and landing fifty Soldiers on the 20th of *May*, they had a smart Engagement with a *Spanish* Party, whom they defeated, and some *Chilefians* came on Board, who gave the *Hollanders* Hopes of Success; but *Brewer*, the *Dutch* Commodore, dying, who projected the Enterprize, and the Natives growing jealous of the Designs of the *Hollanders*, and seeming ready to join the *Spaniards* against them, *Herckerman*, who succeeded *Brewer* in the Command of the Squadron, thought fit to return home without effecting any Thing, having first demolished a little Fort they had erected on the Harbour of *Baldivia*.

In the Year 1669, an old *Spaniard* who resided in the Court of *England*, having represented to King *Charles II.* that the *Spaniards* had been beaten out of most of their Settlements on the Coast of *Chili*, and that it would be no difficult Matter for the *English* to possess themselves of them, Sir *John Narborough* was sent with a Man of War, called the *Sweepstakes*, of thirty-six Guns, to view the Coast of *Chili*, and enquire into the Feazableness of planting Colonies there, and was accompanied thither by the old *Spaniard*, Don *Carlos*, above-mentioned. Sir *John* passed through the Streights of *Magellan*, and not round *Cape-Horn*, as *Brewer* had done and arriving on

CHILI on the Coast *Cbili* near *Baldivia*, Don *Carlos* was set on Shore, and took the Road to the Fort of *Baldivia*, which the *Spaniards* had rebuilt, being then in Possession of the Country, and Don *Carlos* was never heard of more. The *Spaniards* permitted the *English* to trade with their People for Trifles at first, but would not suffer them to have any Communication with the *Indians*, and, at length, made one of the Lieutenants and three Seamen Prisoners, whom they refused to release, and what became of them was never known. Sir *John Narborough*, having no Autho-

rity to commit Hostilities against the *Spaniards*, returned Home. **CHILI.**

In the Reign of Queen *Anne*, the planting Colonies on the Coasts of *Peru* and *Cbili* by the *English*, was again taken into Consideration, and Governor *Pullen*, who was best acquainted with those Coasts, was consulted, who drew up a very specious Scheme on that Head, which he afterwards printed, and to which I refer the Reader, as it may be of excellent Use, whenever we happen to be at War with *France* and *Spain* again.



PATAGONIA, comprehending the TERRA MAGELLANICA and TERRA DEL FOGO.

PATAGONIA **T**HIS Country is sometimes described as a Province of *Cbili*; and, indeed, the *Spaniards* claim the Whole, as far as the most Southern Promontory of *Cape-Horn*, though neither the *Spaniards*, or any other *European* Nation, have a single Colony here.

It is situate between 70 and 85 Degrees of West Longitude; and between 45 and 57 Degrees odd Minutes, North Latitude; bounded by *Cbili* and *La Plata* on the North, and by the *Atlantick*, and *Pacifick* Oceans on the East, South, and West; being divided into two Parts by the Straights of *Magellan*.

It is a mountainous Country, covered with Snow great part of the Year, especially the Southern Division, said to be much colder than the North, under the same Parallels of Latitude; at least, it seems to be so to the *Europeans*, who have passed through the Torrid Zone in their Way thither. Great part of it is a Desert Country, producing very few Vegetables: Sir *John Narborough*, who wintered here in his Way to the Coast of *Cbili*, gives as just an Account of it, as any Writer I meet with.

CAPTAIN *Narborough*, arriving at *Port-Desire*, in 47 Degrees of South La-

tude, on the 21st of *February*, 1670, made several Journies, into the Country, where he found great Store of wild Pease, some sweet Herbs, and white and yellow Flowers, particularly, an Herb, like Sage, which made good Sallad, and preserved his Men from the Scurvy. On the Rocks they found Abundance of Muscles and Limpets, and on a neighbouring Island, great Numbers of Seal and Water-Fowl, which were excellent Food; and his Ship's Crew lived on them, and the Fish he caught there, a considerable Time; and here he found two tolerable Springs of fresh Water also, with which he replenished his Calks. **PATAGONIA.**

THAT on *Friday* the 14th of *March*, he went with his Boats and forty Men, to an Island near *Port Desire*, where they knocked down 400 Seals, and loaded their Boats with them; from whence he gave it the name of *Seal Island*. He observed, the full-grown Male-Seals were of the Size of a large Calf, or young Heifer, having shaggy Neck, Heads, and Faces, like Lions. The Females also resembled Lionesses before, only their Hair was smooth like Horses; whereas the Male was smooth only in his hinder Parts; both of them were very deformed, the Body growing

PATAGONIA. ing tapering downwards, till it came to a Point, where grew two Fins like Feet, and two Feet more grew out of its Breast, so that they could climb up the highest Rocks and Hills, though they delighted chiefly to sleep near the Shore. The Length of this amphibious Animal was from eight to eighteen Feet, and they were generally as big about as a Barrel at the Shoulders.

ON Saturday the 5th of March, he went eight or ten Miles up into the Country, and met with some Herds of Guanacoes, or Camel Sheep, which are so common in Peru. He also saw several Ostriches, a Fox, and a Wild Dog, and five or six Hares, of which he killed one with his Greyhound. It resembled an English Hare, only was much larger, and had a Stump of an Inch long, instead of a Tail; and he observed they lived under Ground, like Rabbits. They saw no Wood, unless some Bushes like White-Thorn. The Land was a dry gravelly Soil, moderately hilly, and produced Grass in the Vallies, but scarce any Thing else, no Fruits of any Kind.

HE found in a small Island near Port Desire, an Inscription upon a Post, signifying that James La Maire was at that Port in the Month of January, 1616 (being written in Dutch) and thereupon he called it La Maire's Island.

THE Captain being about to depart from Port Desire, formally took Possession of that Country for his British Majesty, under an Apprehension that it might yield Gold, as Chili does, which lies on the opposite Shore, but though he ordered his People to search diligently in the Brooks and Gullies for Gold Sand, and dug in several Places, he could discover nothing that looked like a Mineral.

ON March 26, 1670, he observed an Eclipse of the Moon, which shewed there was four Hours forty Minutes Difference of Time between the Meridian of London, and the Meridian of Cape Blanco, which lies in 47 Degrees 20 Minutes South Latitude, on the South-East Coast of America. From Port Desire he sailed to Port St. Julian, in 49 Degrees 10 Minutes South Latitude,

VOL. II. N° 106.

PATAGONIA. where not finding the *Pink*, as he expected, his Men were much discouraged, considering they could expect no Relief, if they should happen to run a-ground on that unknown Coast. But the Hopes he gave them of finding immense Riches in Chili, and setting before them the Example of Captain Drake, who sailed round the World in one Ship, when Navigation was not brought to so great Perfection, they recovered their Courage. That on the 21st of April, he caught in this Port, with his Sien-Net, in the Space of four Hours, 500 Fishes of the Size and Form of Mulletts, and some of them as big as a Man's Leg, which were a great Relief to his Ship's Company. And now the Winter came on apace; the Snows fell; the Waters froze; and the Wind blew very hard and cold from the South-West; from whence he concluded, he should not be able to pass the Streights of Magellan at this Time of the Year, and therefore, determined to winter thereabouts, ordering every one of his Men a Quart of Brandy a Week; and for Meat they had salted Seals and Penguins given them, which proved very good Food.

GOING on Shore at Port St. Julian, on the 22d of April, he found a Salt Pond, or Lake, two Miles in Length, crufted over with good white Salt two Inches thick, of which he laid two Tons in.

HAVING remained here till the 6th of June, he went on Shore with sixteen Men, and travelled ten Miles into the Country, but could go no farther for the Mountains, which were covered with Snow. They yet saw no People; but discovered there had been some in the Snow; and that they had made Fires, and eaten Guanacoes and Ostriches, by the Remains they found of their Feasts.

THAT going on Shore again, the 22d of June, he sent Mr. Wood, his Lieutenant, to the Westward, with three armed Men, who saw seven Indians on a Hill, and three of them advanced towards him with Bows and Arrows in their Hands, loose Skins about their Shoulders, Furs on their Heads, and Pieces of Skin wrapped about their Feet,

PATAGONIA.

Feet, and all the rest naked, only some Part of their Faces and Bodies were painted with Red and White, their natural Colour being Olive: They were of a middle Stature, not so tall as the Lieutenant, well-limbed, their Hair black (which they did not wear very long) and spoke in the Throat. They came pretty neat, but would not suffer themselves to be touched. The Lieutenant threw them a Knife, and some other Trifles, which they took up; but when he offered them a Bottle of Brandy, they would not drink.

AND some others of his Crew saw two more of the Natives behind a Bush, and would have approached them, but they ran away, leaving a Bundle and two little Dogs coupled together, which they brought to the Captain; and he found in the Bundle, several Bags made of Skins with red and white Earth in them, used in painting their Bodies and Faces. There were also Flint-Stones, Arrow-Heads, Bracelets of Shells, braided Thongs, Armadillo-Shells, and some other Trifles; that the Skins were Guanacoes and Seals, and sewed together with a green Gut in a slit Stick, and near the Bundle were found two Staves of tough Cane, in short Joints, about four Feet long. The Captain saw afterwards a Place where the Natives had made a Fire, and left the Bones of some Guanacoes and Ostriches scattered about. He also saw the Skulls of three Men without any Flesh upon them; from whence the Captain conjectures, that the Natives were Man-Eaters; and such Evidence as this is frequently produced to prove the *Americans* to be Cannibals. The Captain was fully convinced, by ocular Demonstration, that the *Patagonians* were not Giants, as the first Adventurers reported; but still he seems to be in doubt, whether they were not Cannibals, though the Evidence of both is the same; and the *Indians* might as well infer that the *Europeans* were Cannibals, because our Surgeons and Apothecaries have frequently Skulls, and sometimes Skeletons, in their Houses. But our People, it seems, began to be ashamed of the fabulous Relations of the *American* Giants and Monsters at that Time, though they

PATAGONIA.

were yet extremely prejudiced in Favour of Canibals; and though Captain *Narborough* is admitted to be a Gentleman of good Judgment, yet Allowances must be made for the Age and Country every Person lives in. At some Times, and at some particular Places, Magick, Witchcraft, and Apparitions are in great Vogue, and not a Week passes, but our Belief is required to some notable Story of this Kind, on Pain of being reputed Infidels: While in other Countries, and at other Times, People imagine they may be very good Christians, without swallowing every incredible Tale, that weak or designing People have the Confidence to affirm the Truth of, especially when they bring no better Proof of what they relate, than the Captain produces to maintain that heavy Charge against this Nation of their being Cannibals, namely, that three Skulls happened to be found in the Possession of some of the People of the Country.

BUT to proceed: The farthest Journey the Captain made into the Country, while he lay at *Port St. Julian*, he says, was twenty-five Miles to the North-West; in which he met with Teal and other Fowl, a Kind of Herons all over red, great Numbers of Guanacoes and Ostriches, Hares, and Partridges, bigger than ours, some Snipes and small Birds, Penwrens, Kites, Hawks, Owls, Foxes, Wild Dogs, Brant Geese, and Armadillos, but no Snake, or venomous Creature, or any Wild Beasts; and was of Opinion, that the Country was very proper both for *European* Corn and Cattle, seeming to be a fruitful Soil.

IN the mean Time, the Captain relates, that twelve of his Men, who did not use much Exercise, fell ill of the Scurvy, and their Legs and Thighs turned perfectly black. Whereupon he thought proper to leave *Port St. Julian*, and sail to *Port Desire*, where he took great Numbers of Seals and Penguins, which he distributed to the Sick, with such Sallads as this Part of the Country affords, and they all recovered in a short Time.

WHILE the Captain lay on Shore at *Port Desire*, he says the Natives came in the Night-Time to a Place where his Men used

PATAGONIA. used to fill their fresh Water, and stole from thence an Iron Pot, and three Suits of Clothes, with some Linen; and he saw in an adjacent Valley, a Model they had made of his Ship, with Earth and Sticks, which he imagined they did, in order to preserve the Memory of that floating Castle having never seen one before, possibly, on that Coast.

HERE the Captain takes an Opportunity to inform us, that the *Isle of Penguins*, which lies at the Entrance of *Port-Desire*, affords such Numbers of Penguins and Seals, that at the Time he was there, as many of them might have been taken, as would have filled 300 Tons of Cask when dressed and salted, and that the Flesh might be kept sweet and good for four Months, if well-cured.

THE Penguin, he observes, is of the Bigness of a Brant-Goose, weighing usually about eight Pounds, and lives upon Fish. Instead of Wings, it has flat Stumps like Fins, and its Feathers are a Kind of Down of a blackish Colour, only grey on the Head, and white on the Neck and Belly: The Legs are short like those of a Goose, and the Bill hooked. They are driven in Flocks to the Boat-Side, and knocked on the Head by the Seamen, so that shipping can never be in Want of fresh Provisions at this Port; and he was of Opinion there might be found a sufficient Quantity of Salt also here in the Summer to salt up their Seals and Penguins, but if not, they would never fail of finding Salt at *Port Julian*.

THE Winter being now passed, the Captain set sail from *Port Desire* on the 13th of *October*, 1670, and on the 19th passed by the *Cape*, called *Beachy-Head*, and the Hill of *St. Ives* in 50 Degrees 10 Minutes South Latitude, where the Land forms a Bay, into which the River of *St. Cruce* discharges itself. And on the 22d of *October*, they arrived at *Cape Virgin Mary*, at the North Entrance of the Straights of *Magellan*, situated in 52 Degrees 26 Minutes South Latitude, which are, in some Parts, three or four Leagues, but in others, not half a League broad.

PATAGONIA. ALL about the Entrance of the Streight, till he came to the first narrow Passage, he observed, that there was very good Anchorage, and not much Tide; but in the Narrow, the Tide runs stronger than in the *Hope* at the *Thames* Mouth, the Flood setting into the Straights, and the Ebb out, and kept a constant Course, as on other Coasts, viz. six Hours Flood, and six Hours Ebb, and rises and falls near four Fathoms perpendicular.

THE Captain having passed the second Narrow in the Straights, went on Shore on the Island *Elizabeth*, and nineteen of the Natives coming down the Hill to him, he changed Knives, Beads, and other Implements with them for their Bows, Arrows and Coats, which were made of the Skins of Guanacoes Seals, and Otters: That they were for laying Hands on every Thing they saw in a brutish Manner, and the more he gave them, the more they craved: That several of his Men danced and sported with them, and shewing them some Gold, he intimated by Signs, that if they could bring him any, he would purchase it of them; but either they did not understand him, or knew of none: And he no sooner left them, and went on Board, but they set Fire to the Grass.

HE relates, that these People are of a middle Stature, well-limbed, with round Faces, low Foreheads, little Noses, and small black Eyes: Their Teeth are smooth, even and white; their Hair saggy, and very black, and of an indifferent Length; Men and Women alike: They are all full-breasted, of an Olive Colour, and painted all over their Bodies with red Earth and Grease; their Faces daubed in Spots with white Clay, and black Streaks made with Soot; their Arms and Feet the like: Their Heads are generally small, their Fingers short, and their Bodies very active: their Cloathing is of the Skins of Seals, Guanacoes, and Otters, sewed together; their Garments are in Form of a Carpet, five Feet Square, which they wrap about them, as the *Scotchman* does his Plaiding: Upon their Heads they wear Caps of the Skins of Fowls with the Feathers, and on

PATAGONIA. on their Feet Pieces of Skins to keep them from the Ground: They are very hardy, for though it was very cold then, they do not wear these Skins when they go about any Business that requires stirring. They have no Hair on any Part of their Bodies, or Faces, nor any Thing to cover their Nudities, except that the Women have a Piece of Skin hanging before them. The Men and Women are cloathed alike, only the Women go without Caps, and wear Bracelets of Shells about their Necks, which the Men have not. The Men are something taller than the Women, and fuller-faced; the Men have a harsher Voice, and rattle in the Throat; the Women somewhat shriller; they often repeat the Word *Ursab*, and if they did not like any Thing, Would cry *Ur, Ur*. They feed both upon Fish and Flesh, live under no Manner of Government, or worship any Thing. At our Landing, says the Captain, they came to us with a great Noise, every one his Bow ready, and two Arrows in his Hand. Their Bows are about an Ell long, and every Arrow eighteen Inches, neatly made of Wood, headed with Flint-Stones, curiously wrought, Broad-Arrow Fashion, and well fastened to the Arrow; the other End being feathered with two Feathers and tied on with the Gut of some Beast, while yet green and moist; the Bow-string is of twisted Guts. They have large Mongrel Dogs of several Colours, not unlike *Spanish* Dogs. I saw no other Domestick Creatures, nor their Boats, which then lay on the other Side of the Island towards the Main, where they waited for fair Weather to catch Penguins, of which there is a vast Quantity, as also of white-breasted Divers.

He saw on both Sides of the Streights, Woods, which seemed to be regularly planted, and Timber in them two Feet Diameter. The Bark of some of these Trees is as hot as Pepper, and when dried had the smell of fine Spices and they

used it in seasoning their Meat and Soup, PATAGONIA. to which it gave a fine Flavour, and he believed this Spice to be very wholesome; but he saw no Fruit-Trees on the Shores, or Oak, Ash, Hazel, or any Trees like ours in *England*; the Woods consisting chiefly of the Pepper-Kind Tree above-mentioned, and another like our Beach. The largest Tree he saw in the Streights, was about two Feet and a half Diameter, and thirty or forty Feet high. The Woods are usually on the Sides of Hills, the Land being very high on both Shores, and the Tops of the Mountains scarce ever free from Snow.

He observes, that *Cape Froward*, the most Southerly Land on the Continent of *South America* (for *Cape Horn* is upon the Island *Del Fogo*) lies in 53 Degrees 52 Minutes South Latitude, 68 Degrees, 40 Minutes West of the *Lizard*; and he computed the whole Length of the Streights from *Cape Virgin Mary* to *Cape Disseada*, to be 116 Leagues, and on the North-West Part of the Streights in the *South-Sea*, lie four little Islands near *Cape Victory*, which he denominated, *The Islands of Direction*, being a guide to those who enter the Streights from the *South-Sea*. From the Streights Mouth, he sailed North to the *Island of Succour*, in 45 Degrees South Latitude, where he arrived the 26th of *November*, and took in fresh Water. He saw none of the Natives of this Island, only one of their Huts, which resembled those of the Natives on the Continent of *Patagonia*, and were more like Arbours than Houses, being composed of Boughs of Trees.

BETWEEN the *Island of Succour* and the Continent, there lies another Island, where the Captain went on Shore, and having taken Possession of it for his Majesty, gave it the Name of *Narborough Island*. Here he says he found his Men in pretty good Health, and seventy-two in Number; so that he seems to have lost eight in his Passage hither.

LA PLATA, or PARAGUA.

LA PLATA.
Situation.

Provinces.

THE Province of *La Piata* is situate between 50 and 75 Degrees of Western Longitude, and between 12 and 37 Degrees of South Latitude, bounded by the Country of the *Amazons* on the North, by *Brazil* and the *Atlantick* Ocean on the East, by *Patagonia*, and Part of *Chili*, on the South, and by another Part of *Chili* and *Peru* on the West; being divided in two Parts by the River *Paragua*, which runs the whole Length of it from North to South. It is divided into six Provinces, viz. 1. *La Plata Proper*, bounded by the River of *Plate* on the North, by the *Atlantick* Ocean on the East, by *Patagonia* on the South, and by the Provinces of *Tucuman* and *Chili* on the West: The chief Towns whereof are, 1. *Buenos Ayres*, situate on the Southern Shore of the River of *Plate*, about fifty Leagues from the Mouth of it, in 60 Degrees of West Longitude, and 36 Degrees South Latitude, the River being seven Leagues broad at this Place. There are five Churches in it, besides the Cathedral, and several Convents and Nunneries, and it has a Castle regularly fortified for its Defence. It is a very great Mart where the Merchandizes of *Europe* and *America* are sold and exchanged; and hither great Numbers of Negroes were lately brought by the *English*, while the *Affiento* Contract was in Force; but now that Branch of Trade is fallen into the Hands of the *French* and other Nations. 2. *Santa Fe*, situate at the Confluence of the Rivers *Salada* and *Paragua*, upwards of 200 Miles North-West of *Buenos Ayres*. 3. *Assumption*, situate at the Confluence of the Rivers *La Plata* and *Paragua*, 500 Miles North of *Santa Fe*.

2. THE Province of *Tucuman*, bounded by *Peru* on the North, by the River *Paragua* on the East, and by *Chili* on the

West; the chief Towns whereof are, 1. *St. Jago*, lying in the Midway, between *Potosi* and *Buenos Ayres*, 250 Leagues from each in 67 Degrees of West Longitude, and 29 Degrees of South Latitude, a Bishop's See and University. 2. *Cordoua*, 100 Leagues South of *St. Jago*, which is also a Bishop's Sec.

3. THE Province of *Uragua*, lying on the South-East Frontier, bounded by *Brazil* on the East, and the River *Plata* on the South: The chief Towns, 1. *Purification*, situate on the River *Uragua*, in 29 Degrees South Latitude. 2. *La Capia*, or *Tapia*, situate on the East Side of the River *Paragua*, in 32 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude.

4. THE Province of *Parana*, bounded by *Guayra* on the North, and *Brazil* on the East: The chief Towns whereof are, 1. *Itapoa*, situate on the River *Parana*, in 27 Degrees South Latitude. 2. *St. Ignatio*, situate on the South Bank of the River *Parana*, a little South-East of *Itapoa*.

5. The Province of *Guayra*, bounded by *Paragua Proper* on the North, by *Brazil* on the East, and by *Parana* on the South: The chief Towns whereof are; 1. *Guayra*, situate on the River *Parana*, in 24 Degrees South Latitude. 2. *St. Xavier*, situate on the Frontiers of *Brazil*, 100 Leagues East of *Guayra*.

6. THE Province of *Paragua Proper*, bounded by the Country of the *Amazons*, on the North, by *Brazil* on the East, by *Guayra* on the South, and by the River *Paragua*, which divides it from *Tucuman* and *Peru*, on the West: But our Map-makers have not given us one Town in it; probably, it is a Desert on the Side of *Amazonia*, and the Limits between that Country and *Amazonia*, have never been settled.

LA PLATA.

Lakes.

Rivers.

THE *Atlantick* Ocean only visits this Country on the Side of *Buenos Ayres*, but there are Abundance of Lakes, of which that of *Xarayes* seems the most considerable; and there is another in 30 Degrees South Latitude, twenty Leagues East of the River *Paragua*. Several of their Rivers rise in the Mountains of *Andes*, and taking their Course to the South-East, fall into the great River *Paragua*. Others rise in the Mountains, which divide *La Plata* from *Brasil*, and running South-West, fall into the same River *Paragua*, which rises out of the Lake *Xarayes*, in 15 Degrees South Latitude, and running almost due South, unites its Waters with the *Uragua*; and here, all the united Streams obtain the Name of *La Plata*, till they reach the *Atlantick* Ocean.

2. THAT which is properly called the River of *Plate*, rises near the Town of *La Plata* in *Peru*, and running to the South-East, falls into the River *Paragua*, in 28 Degrees South Latitude, after which it loses the Name of *Plata*, and the united Stream is called the *Paragua*, till it meets with the River *Uragua*, and then it resumes the Name of *Plata* again, till it discharges itself into the Ocean.

THIS River is said to have obtained its Name of *Plata* upon a double Account, 1. Because it rises near the Town of *La Plata*; and, 2. Because the *Plate* is sometimes brought down this Stream from *Peru* to *Buenos Ayres*.

3. THE third considerable River, is that of *Uragua*, which rising in the Mountains that divide *Brasil* from this Province, runs almost due South, till it unites its Waters with the *Paragua*, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, and is almost as large as that River, being navigable for Ships several hundred Miles.

4. OUT of the same Mountains, to the Northward, rises the River *Parana*, another very large Stream, which running almost parallel to the former, falls into the *Paragua*, in 28 Degrees South Latitude.

5. THE fifth River I shall mention is the River *Salado*, so named from the Saltiness of its Waters. This River rises in the *Andes*, and running to the South-East

falls into the *Paragua*, in 33 Degrees South Latitude. LA PLATA.

6. THE River *Tercero*, which rises in the Mountains of *Andes*, and running almost due East, falls into the *Paragua*, in 34 Degrees, not far from the Town of *Spirito Sancto*.

THERE are a Multitude of other Rivers both on the East and West of this Province, which fall into the great River *Paragua*, and so fertilize the Plains, that they abound in good Meadow and Pasture Grounds, which feed innumerable Herds of *European* Cattle, viz. Horses, Cows, Sheep, and Goats, which from a few of each Species, that were carried thither by the *Spaniards* 200 Years ago, are multiplied to Admiration.

As to the Seasons, the North Part of this Country, which lies within the Tropic of *Capricorn*, has in *November* and *December* annually, when the Sun is vertical, very heavy Rains, Storms, and Tempests, as other Countries which lie in the same Latitude within the Southern Tropic have: And at this Time, all the flat Country is overflowed, their Cisterns and Reservoirs of Water are replenished, which serve them the rest of the Year till the Rains return; their Lands are moistened, and made capable of Tillage, and whenever these Rains fail, it occasions a Famine amongst them. The Beginning of the rainy Season is the Time of Sowing and Planting, and the fair Season, which follows upon the Retreat of the Sun to the Northward, is their Harvest.

BUT directly contrary, in that Part of the Country, which lies South of the Tropic of *Capricorn*, it is their Summer, (their fair Season, when the Sun is nearest them,) viz. in *November*, *December*, and *January*. And those Rivers which rise within the Tropicks, particularly *La Plata*, *Paragua*, and *Parana*, after the Rains are fallen within the Tropicks, swell and overflow their Banks, as they pass through the South Part of this Country, rendering it as fruitful as the *Nile* does *Egypt*; and, indeed, this is the Case, in almost every Part of the World, where their Rivers rise within the Tropicks; the Periodical

Rains

LA PLATA.

Rains swell them, and occasion them to overflow their Banks, so that the flat Country near their Mouths, appears like a Sea; and as the Water goes off, the Husbandman begins to sow and Plant his Lands, which are rendered exceeding fruitful by the Inundation; whereas, without this, it would be impossible for him to raise a Crop in any Place. Their Plains are so exceeding hot and dry, and there falls so little Rain in the Countries, which lie just within the Tropicks, as this and *Egypt* do, that they would produce scarce any Thing, if they wanted these annual Floods: And, I am apt to think it is when these are at the Height, that the Mouth of the River *Plata* appears to be 200 or 300 Miles broad; for the same Thing happens annually, near the Mouth of the River *Niger* in *Africa*, near the Mouth of the *Ganges* in the *East-Indies*, and at the Mouth of every River almost, that has its Source within the Tropicks, where the Rain falls in vast Quantities whenever the Sun is vertical.

THAT Part of the Country, which lies West of the great River *Paragua* consists of large Plains, extending 200 or 300 Leagues; but we must except the Mountains of the *Andes*, whose Branches encumber the Western Frontier, and the Country to the Eastward of the River *Paragua*, which borders on *Brasil*, where there is a Variety of Hills and Valleys, Woods and Champaign.

THE Natives, before the *Spaniards* arrived, lived, in Tents, or slight Huts, wandering from one Part of the Country to the other, like the *Scythians* and *Arabs*; but this is to be understood of those that inhabited the Plains. As to those who lived between the River *Paragua* and *Brasil*, these lived in Woods or Caves; but neither the one or the other, had any Thing like a Town, till the *Spaniards* taught them to build. The *Jesuits*, who are now possessed of that part of the Country which lies East of the great River *Paragua*, boast that they reduced these savage Nations to Civility, and made Christians of them purely by their Preaching: Certain it is, they govern them absolutely

LA PLATA.

both in Spirituals and Temporal. There is no Place in the World, where the People express a more profound Submission to their Superiors. Among other Things, the *Jesuits* relate, that they have prevailed on them to abandon their brutish and vagrant Way of Life, and dwell in Towns and Cantons, as the Missionaries call them, the Situation whereof is always chosen and assigned them by these Fathers. And as the flat Country near the Rivers is annually overflowed (as has been related already) yet in the dry Season it is absolutely necessary to have their Habitations near some Water, as well on Account of their Plantations and Husbandry, there being the greatest Increase where the Inundation has been, as also for the Convenience of Water Carriage, and an easy Communication with the several Cantons: For these, and many other Reasons, the Fathers pitch upon some fair Eminence on the Side of a Lake or River, where they have Plenty of Wood, and here they lay out a Town after the *Spanish* Model, that is, they first form a Square, on the Side of which usually stands a handsome Church, their Schools, the Father's House, who presides in the Canton, and the Halls and Offices of their Courts of Justice; and from the Square, run broad handsome Streets of a great Length, having other Streets crossing them where the Canton is large.

FATHER *Step* informs us, that they have twenty-six of these Cantons on the Banks of the Rivers *Uragua* and *Paragua*, each of them containing 800 or 1000 Houses, and 7000 or 8000 Souls, under the Government of two Missionaries. The Church of each Canton is usually built of Brick or Stone, and has a very lofty Steeple, containing four or five Bells. It is as richly furnished and adorned with Plate, Vestments, and Utensils, as the *Spanish* Churches in *Europe*: And besides the high Altar, they have frequently several Side Altars and Chapels. They have also Organs, Trumpets, Hautboys, Violins, and other Instrumental Musick, and some exceeding good Voices; so that few Cathedrals

thedrals are better accommodated than the Churches of these Cantons.

THE Father further relates, that the Station allotted him was the Canton of *Japegu*, the first of the twenty-six converted Cantons, situated on an Eminence near the River *Uragua*, in 29 Degrees South Latitude, in a Place formed for Pleasure and Delight; for to the Eastward of it runs that noble River, the banks whereof are planted with large Timber-Trees for several hundred Leagues, and there are some Islands in it, lying in View of the Canton which he describes as a Perfect Paradise. On this River, and the Islands in it, says the Father, I frequently take the Air, attended by my Disciples, and a numerous Band of Musick. On the South-West and North, the Canton is surrounded with the most fruitful Pastures in the World, of a vast Extent, and stocked with incredible Numbers of *European* Cattle; Venison also is in great Plenty, such as Wild Deer Wild Goats, and *Indian* Sheep; and they do not want Partridges, Pigeons, and other Fowls Wild and Tame. They have, also, Shoals of excellent Fish in their Rivers.

BUT notwithstanding the pleasant and advantageous Situation of these *Indian* Towns, thus laid out by the Jesuits, the Buildings were generally mean at first. A Brick and Tiled House was very rare; the Materials were usually Thatch and Clay, and one Room served the whole Family: Here they lay promiscuously, some on the Skins of Beasts on the Floor, and others in Hammocks of Net-Work; their Kitchen Utensils being only some few Pots, Pans, and Calabashes, with Wooden Spits and Gridirons, on which they dried, rather than broiled their Meat.

BUT the Father tells us, they began to improve both in their Buildings and Furniture, since the Jesuits have taught them to make Tiles, and instructed them in other Mechanick Arts. He had in his Canton, particularly, six long Streets, the Houses whereof were covered with Tiles.

REVOLUTIONS in LA PLATA.

THE *Portuguese* from *Brasil*, were the first *Europeans* that invaded this Country in the Year 1524. *Alexius Garcia*,

by the Command of the Governor of *Brasil*, passed the Mountains with a small Party, and marched cross *La Plata* to *Perna*, where he met with Abundance of Silver, but was cut off with most of his Men, as he was returning to *Brasil*, and another Party of sixty *Portuguese*, who were sent out to enable him to make good his Retreat. In the Year 1526, *Sebastian Cabot* was employed by the *Spaniards*, who sailed up the River of *Plata*, as far as the Place where the *Portuguese* were defeated, and there met with the Treasure that *Garcia* had possessed himself of; for the Natives had left it there not knowing the Value of it. *Cabot* returned to *Spain* with this Prize, and reported that this Country was very rich, which the People easily gave Credit to, when they saw the Treasure he brought with him: Whereupon several Gentlemen of the best Families, prepared to visit this imaginary rich Coast, and Don *Peter de Mendoza*, the Emperor's Sewer, had the Command of the Forces sent with them, amounting to upwards of 2000 Men, besides Mariners. *Mendoza* arriving at the Mouth of the River *Plata*, in 1535, landed and built the Town of *Buenos Ayres* on the South Side of the River, but not without great Opposition; for *James Mendoza* his Brother, and 250 Men were killed in an Engagement with the Natives.

IN the Year 1553, General *Baldivia* sent 200 Men from *Chili* under the Command of *Francis de Acquire*, with whom he passed the *Andes*, and penetrating far to the Eastward, built the City of *St. Jago*; and *John Gomez Zarita*, being detached from *Chili* two Years after, built *Corduba*, and made a Conquest of the Country as far as the great River *Paragua* and the Inhabitants of the East Side of that River, it is said, were induced to submit to the *Spaniards*, by the Arts of the Jesuit Missionaries sent amongst them, and as a Reward of that Service the Country between the River *Paragua* and *Brasil*, was conferred on those Fathers, who are Sovereigns of it at this Day. The Jesuits, who are sent upon such Missions, are instructed in almost every Art and Science; they are Physicians, Mathematicians, and under-

LA PLATA. understand several Mechanick Arts; by their administring Physick gratis, the People are mightily obliged, and by their Skill in Mathematicks, they surpris the ignorant Natives, who are ready to adore them as Gods, and resign their understandings and Consciences entirely to their Direction. It was thus they got Footing in *China* and *Japan*, and it is thus they debauched the *Mohawk* Nation, and other friendly *Indians* from us, and drew them over to the Interest of *France* and *Spain* who have done, and continue to do us more Mischief in our *American* Colonies, by their Missionaries, than by their Arms: But what prevailed still more on the Natives of *Paragua*, was the good Offices they did them, in skreening them from the Barbarity of the *Spanish* Soldiery, and from the *Portuguese* of *Brazil*, to the Eastward of them, who harraressed their Country for several Years, till the Jesuits had instructed them in the Art of War, and put Arms in their Hands, whereby they were enabled to defend their Country against the *Portuguese* of *Brazil*; and the Jesuits, and their Subjects, have ever since enjoyed an uninterrupted Tranquility, in one of the finest Countries of the World, in the greatest Affluence and Plenty insomuch, that some have given it the Name of the Jesuits Paradise, who boast they have converted this People to Christianity, who formerly worshipped the Sun and Moon, Trees, Rivers, and almost every Thing else, animate and inanimate, as other *Americans*, *Africans*, and many of the Inhabitants of *Asia* and *Europe* formerly did.

THEY formerly allowed also of Polygamy and Concubinage, and the Jesuits found that the confining one Man to one Woman, was their principal Objection against their becoming Christians; but the Jesuits now having the sole Direction of this Matter, marry their Disciples very young. When a Virgin is Fourteen, and a Lad Sixteen, they oblige them to marry. If a Maid above the Age of Fourteen, has seen a Man she likes, she communicates her Passion to her Spiritual Father; whereupon the Missionary sends for the Man, and says,

My Son such a Lass desires to have you LA PLATA. for her Husband; to which if he gives his Consent, as he usually does, the Match is made, and they receive the Blessing of the Priest. Here are no Jointures or Settlements to be made; if the Parties like each other, there are no Objection to the tying the Nuptial Knot. The Missionary provides them a House, is at the Charge of the Wedding Dinner, and gives them a Cow and other Necessaries proper to begin the World with.

Thus having given a Description of the *Spanish* Territories on the Continent of *America*, I shall sum up their present State in the Words of a late Author of good Credit, *viz.*

THE only essential Maxim which runs through the whole political Oeconomy of the *Spaniards*, in respect of their Territories here, is the keeping of them in an absolute Dependence upon *Spain*. All Things therefore relating to their *American* Empire, receive their first Form, and all Disputes, all Projects, and all Designs of extending or improving their Dominions, are considered in their dernier Resort, by the Council for the *Indies* in *Spain*, composed of such, who, both from Theory and Experience, have attained a perfect Knowledge of these Countries. As to *America* itself, it is, as I have said, divided into two large Governments, *Mexico*, called also *New Spain*, and *Peru*; each of which hath its Viceroy, who is honoured with a very extensive Commission. He hath for his Assistance, a Council, and under him, in the large Provinces of his Government, several subordinate Officers, who wear the Titles of Presidents, Alcades, &c. appointed at the Will of the Viceroy, who notwithstanding some outward Forms and Shew of Limitations from his Council, is for all that absolute; making by Presents, Perquisites and Traffick, an immense Wealth, by large Sums, out of which he procures himself to be continued another five Years (his first and usual Term) in his Government, and sometimes more. The two chief Points which these Viceroyes have committed to their Care, is the Conserving, and, if it be any Way practicable,

LA PLATA. ble, the Increasing the King's Revenues in Plate, &c. which yearly is carried from *Porto Bello* to *Spain*, and the keeping the Natives, *Creoles*, *Mesteeze* and *Indians* in Subjection, which is executed with the utmost Rigour, and is the Source of all the Evils that are felt here: And since the chief Knowledge that can be acquired of the true Situation of these Affairs is derived from hence, it seems reasonable I should explain it a little further.

THE natural-born *Spaniards* are solely vested with Command throughout all the *Spanish Indies*; they only enjoy Posts of Honour, Profit and Trust; and this it is which occasions those Draughts, which have so drained and weakened their Dominions in *Europe*; for putting no Confidence even in the very first Generation of their Descendants, and absolutely prohibiting all Strangers from going thither in their Service, a Necessity follows of sending thither continually large Supplies, that they may still be in a Condition to hold the Reins with equal Tightness: This Form of Government creates an irreconcilable Antipathy between the *European Spaniards*, and the *Creoles*, i. e. those born of *Spanish* Parents in the *West-Indies*. These latter see, with Indignation, themselves equally shut out from all considerable Preferment, either in Church or State; the

LA PLATA. most palpable Partiality shewn in all Judicial Decisions, between them and the *Spaniards*; and in a Word, the whole Policy of their Governors bent to distress, and deject them. The *Spaniards*, on the other Hand, no Ways ignorant of their Sentiments, and moreover, continually jealous of their Desire to throw off the *Spanish* Yoke, entirely exert their utmost Arts to enfeeble and enslave them: They discourage, as far as they are able, all Sorts of Manufactures, of which being unprovided, they must of Course purchase such as are sent from *Spain*. They also endeavour to hinder Plantations (except *Estantions*, or *Beef-Farms*) that they may not have it in their Power to possess rich and improved Settlements; the Cause why those noble Countries are so little cultivated: And lastly, they make it their Aim to increase Luxury, Idleness, and Pusillanimity amongst them, that they more easily may be kept in Obedience; whence it apparently follows, *Buccaneers*, and such like, in small Numbers, are able to do the utmost Mischief. And thus throughout all those vast rich and noble Provinces, the Inhabitants seem inspired with a Spirit of Dissension, which renders them continually restless and uneasy, making almost useless those Blessings, indulgent Providence has conferred upon them.

SPANISH AMERICAN ISLANDS.

SPANISH ISLANDS. THE great *Spanish American Islands*, which lie in the North Sea, Part of the *Atlantick* Ocean, remain still to be described, viz. *Cuba*, *Hispaniola*, *Portorico*, *Trinidad*, *Margaretta*, and some lesser Islands near them.

Cuba. CUBA, the largest of the *Spanish* Islands, in the *American* Seas, is situate between 74 and 87 Degrees of Western Longitude, and between 20 and 23 Degrees odd Minutes, North Latitude; being 800 Miles long from East to West, and 200 broad in most Places; thirty Leagues North of *Jamaica*, and near twenty Leagues West of *Hispaniola*. It is divided by a Chain of Hills,

SPANISH ISLANDS. that run from East to West through the Middle of it; from whence descend some small Streams, but there is scarce a navigable River in the Island. The chief Towns are, 1. *St Jago* the Capital, situate on the South-East Shore of the Island, in 70 Degrees odd Minutes West Longitude, and 20 Degrees North Latitude; a commodious Port, and strongly fortified. It is the only Bishop's See in the Island; but is neither large or populous, neither the Bishop or Viceroy residing here.

2. THE *Havanna*, a secure spacious Harbour, of difficult Access, on the North-West Shore of the Island, in 84 Degrees odd

SPANISH ISLANDS. odd Minutes West Longitude, and 23 Degrees of North Latitude, upwards of fifty Leagues South of *Florida*. Here the Gallies from *Carthage* and *Vera-Cruz*, rendezvous on their Return from *Spain*. The Town contains about 2000 Souls, besides the Garrison; the Governor of the Island, the Bishop, and most of the Men of Figure and Business reside here: There are several good Harbours about the Island, particularly one in the South-East Part of the Island, where the *British* Fleet rode after the Siege of *Carthage*, in 1741, to which Admiral *Vernon* gave the Name of *Cumberland Harbour*.

THE Town of *Baracoa*, on the North-East of the Island, has a good Harbour for small Vessels.

PORTO DEL PRINCIPE lies on the same Coast, 300 Miles East of the *Havana*: *Santa Cruz* also is situate on the North Coast, thirty Miles East of the *Havana*.

THE Animals produced here, are the same as in the neighbouring Continent, and *European* Cattle are vastly multiplied; but *European* Grain does not thrive here; their Bread is made chiefly of *Cassia* Root.

COLUMBUS first discovered this Island, in the Year 1492, as related in the Introduction; but in all the Voyages he made to *America*, he never found, that it was an Island; and the *Spaniards* fixing first at *Hispaniola*, on Account of the Gold they found there, this Island of *Cuba* was not entirely conquered, till the Year 1512, or 1514; Don *James Velasquez* having the Honour of reducing it. The *Spaniards* have frequently been disturbed in the Possession of it by their Enemies, and the Buccaneers, particularly Captain *Cliff*, took the Capital City of *St. Jago*, in the Year 1601, and Captain *Morgan*, the Town of *Porto del Principe*, in the Year 1669.

Hispaniola. THE next largest of the *Spanish* Islands, is that of *Hispaniola*, situate between 66 and 75 Degrees of West Longitude, and between 18 and 20 Degrees of North Latitude, being about 600 Miles long, and 200 broad, 60 Miles East of *Cuba*.

It is at present divided between the

SPANISH ISLANDS. *Spaniards* and *French*; the South-East Part subject to *Spain*, and the North-West, subject to *France*: The *Indian* Name of the whole Island, was *Babio*; but *Columbus* gave it the Name of *Hispaniola*, and it was a great while called *Domingo*, from the Capital City of that Name.

THERE is a Chain of Mountains run through the Middle of it, from whence Gold Sand was formerly washed down into the Rivulets, and yielded the *Spaniards* a great deal of Treasure; but there is little or none of that precious Metal found in their Rivers at present. The Air and Seasons are the same here, as under the same Parallels between the Tropicks elsewhere; no Island has better Harbours, of which *Domingo*, in the *Spanish* Division of the Island, is the chief.

DOMINGO is situate on the South-East Coast of the Island, in 70 Degrees West Longitude, and 18 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude. It is built after the *Spanish* Model, and most delightfully situated; a fine Country on the North and East, a navigable River on the West, and the Sea on the South, being the See of an Archbishop, to whom the Bishop of *St. Jago* in *Cuba* is Suffragan, as are several other Bishops in *Terra Firma*. It is also the most antient Royal Audience in *America*, the Seat of the *Spanish* Governor. It contains several fine Churches and Monasteries, and is so strong by Art and Nature, that it baffled the most formidable Fleet and Army that ever *England* sent into *America*, during *Cromwell's* Usurpation, in 1654. The rest of the Towns, subject to *Spain*, are *Higney*, situate thirty Leagues East of *Domingo*; *Zibo*, twenty Leagues East of *Domingo*; *Cotuy*, at the East End of the Island; *Azua*, situate eight Leagues West of *Domingo*, a good Port, situate at the Bottom of a fine Bay; *Conception de la Vega*, situate about eighty Miles North of *Domingo*, in which is a Cathedral, with several Convents and Parochial Churches, having been heretofore a Bishop's See; it was built by *Columbus*, one of whose Titles was that of Duke de la *Vega*. The Towns in *Hispaniola*, subject to the *French*, are *Petit-Guaves*, a Port Town, situate on

SPANISH ISLANDS. a great Bay at the West End of the Island; *Leogane*, another Port in the same Bay, and *Port Lewis* a good Harbour, situate in the South-West Part of the Island, taken by Commodore *Knowles* in the last Year of the late War. There is a Port also called *Cape Francis*, and the Fort *De Paix* on the North-East Part of the Island, and several other Settlements, which belong to the *French*, where they may raise Sugar enough to supply all *Europe*.

THE first Discovery and Conquest of this Island by *Columbus* for the *Spaniards*, in 1492, has been related already in the Introduction to the History of *America*: The *Spaniards* enjoyed this Conquest many Years; but the Gold and Pearls they met with at first, being exhausted, and the Natives worn out and extirpated, by the rigorous Slavery they endured under the cruel *Spaniards*, though the Inhabitants, at their Arrival, amounted to upwards of 2,000,000 of People, they themselves thought fit to abandon the Island, and transport themselves to the Continent, where fresh Mines of Treasure were discovered every Day: The Cattle, which were brought over from *Europe*, being vastly multiplied, and running wild, after they had lost their Masters, the Buccaneers and Free-Booters began to settle here, and did not only victual their Ships here, but hunted the Wild Cattle, and sold them to Sea-faring People, and killed a great many more only for their Hides and Tallow. The *Spaniards* finding their Foreign Traffick much interrupted by the Buccaneers, and jealous that some other Powers might take Possession of the Island, thought fit to send Colonies thither again, and took Possession of the Capital City of *Domingo*, and almost all the South Coast of the Island, but could not entirely drive the Buccaneers from the North-West Coast, and the Island of *Tortuga* opposite to it, where they had fortified themselves; and these being most of them Natives of *France*, the *French* King sent a Governor thither, and obliged these disorderly People to build Towns, cultivate the Lands, and live in Subjection to the Laws of *France*; since which Time, they have made prodigious Improvements, insomuch that

Hispaniola may now be looked upon as SPANISH ISLANDS. one of the most valuable Acquisitions the *French* have in *America*, particularly with Regard to their Sugar Plantations (as has been intimated already,) and the noble Harbours and Forts they are now in Possession of on that Coast, which gives them an Opportunity of disturbing and ruining the Commerce of other Nations they happen to be at War with, as the *Spaniards* experienced in King *William's* War, and the *English* in that of Queen *Anne*.

ONE Reason of the *Spaniards* deserting this fruitful Island of *Hispaniola*, it is said, was their being perpetually harassed and plundered by the *English* and *Dutch*, in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*; and why neither of those Nations possessed themselves of this important Island, when they had driven the *Spaniards* from thence, is not easy to be conceived; for were either of the Maritime Powers possessed of it, there are so many fine Harbours for the Security of their Ships, and such Plenty of Provisions, that here they might ride Masters of the *American* Seas, and give Laws to all other Powers.

SIR *Francis Drake*, in the Year 1586, took the Capital City of *St. Domingo* by Storm, with 1200 Men, and then quitted it again, as he had done several other *Spanish* Ports in *America*. It seems to have been a Maxim then in the Court of *England*, to humble the Pride of the *Spaniards*, but not absolutely to drive them from their Settlements in the *West-Indies*.

BUT *Cromwell* and his Ministry were of a different Mind: There is no one Enterprize that cunning Usurper seemed to set his Heart upon more than the possessing himself of this important Island, which he evidently saw, must give him the Command of those Seas, if it did not let him into a Share of the Treasures of *Mexico* and *Peru*. He sent Admiral *Penn* and *Venables* thither, therefore, in the Year 1654, with a fine Fleet, and 10,000 Land-Men on Board, who had infallibly made themselves Masters of the Island, if some that envied *Cromwell* that glorious Conquest, had not defeated the Design by unnecessary Delays in executing his Orders, and sending

SPANISH
ISLANDS.

sending such Provisions, Arms, and Ammunition on Board the Fleet, that when they came to use them were found to be good for nothing. However, though these Forces were not so fortunate as to subdue the Island of *Hispaniola*, they did the Nation the next best Service they could possibly have performed, in making a Conquest of *Jamaica*, which the *English* have kept Possession of to this Day.

THERE are several small Islands near the Coast of *Hispaniola*, of which the chief are *Savona* and *St. Catalina*, at the South-East Part of the Island; *Navaza*, at the West End of *Hispaniola*; *Guanabo*, in the Bay of *Leogane*; and, lastly, *Tortuga*, on the North-West Coast, an Island of between twenty and thirty Leagues in Circumference, in which there is an excellent Harbour of difficult Access.

HERE the Buccaneers and Free-Booters of all Nations had their first Rendezvous, and fortifying the Island, bid Defiance to all Mankind for some Years. They consisted chiefly of the *French* Hunters of *Hispaniola*, who possessed Part of that Island on the *Spaniards* deserting it, and spent their Time in Hunting and taking the Black Cattle that ran wild there. These were joined by great Numbers of *English* and *Dutch*, and other Seamen; who having been barbarously treated by the *Spaniards*, formed considerable Fleets, and made all *Spanish* Ships Prize, that came in their Way; and sometimes, it is said, they made no Scruple of seizing the Ships of other Nations, or at least plundering them of their Ammunition and Provisions, when they wanted themselves; but since the *French* King has obliged those People to submit to a regular Form of Government, and established his Dominion in the North-West Part of the Island of *Hispaniola*, the Buccaneers have disused their Depredations at Sea as well as their Hunting by Land, and applied themselves to cultivate the Soil, and particularly to improve the Sugar Plantations there, in which they have been very successful. This Colony, as has been intimated already, does not only prejudice the *British* Sugar Plan-

tations extremely, but will ever remain a *SPANISH* Thorn in our Sides in Time of War; for *ISLANDS* from hence they will be in a Condition to disturb the Trade of our *American* Colonies, unless we can find Means to remove them. And this is one Reason why the *Spaniards* have of late Years favoured the *French* more than the *English*, since they have possessed themselves of the North-West Part of *Hispaniola*, where they have a Variety of commodious Harbours for the greatest Fleets, with which they can, at any Time, cut off the Trade between *Spain* and *America*.

P O R T O R I C O .

*P*ORTO Rico, is situate between *Porto Rico*.

64 and 66 Degrees West Longitude, and in 18 Degrees North Latitude, about 120 Miles long, and 60 broad. This Island consists of little fruitful Hills and Vallies, and produces the same Fruits as the former Islands, and is equally unhealthy in the rainy Season.

THE Town of *Porto Rico*, or *St. John*, is situate in 65 Degrees West Longitude, and in 18 Degrees North Latitude, in a little Island on the North Side of the Main, forming a capacious Harbour, and joined to the chief Island by a Causey, and defended by Forts and Batteries, which render the Town inaccessible.

IT was discovered by *Columbus* in his second Voyage, in the Year 1493, who informs us, that he met with some elegant Buildings and Gardens in this Island; but being employed in Discoveries on the Continent afterwards, it was not reduced under the Obedience of the *Spaniards*, or planted by them till the Year 1510, when *John Ponce de Leon*, Deputy-Governor of *Hispaniola*, being informed there were Gold Mines in *Boroquen* (*Porto Rico*,) obtained Leave of *Nicholas Obando* the Governor, to plant a Colony there, and embarking with some few *Spaniards*, arrived at *Boroquen*, where, pretending he only came to establish a friendly Commerce with the Natives, the chief Cacique, or Lord of the Island, made an Alliance with the *Spaniards*, and treated them ve-

SPANISH ISLANDS. ry hospitably, shewing them two Rivers, wherein were some Gold Sands. Whereupon *Ponce de Leon* introducing a good Number of *Spaniards*, and building several Forts in the Island, usurped the Dominion of it: And not content with taking the Country from the inoffensive Natives, he obtained a Commission from the Court of *Spain* to be Governor of the Island, under Colour whereof he made all the People Slaves, dividing them among his Captains and Followers, who employed those poor People in digging for Gold (of which, it seems, there was but little to be found) and in all Manner of Drudgery, such as Building, Planting, carrying Burthens, &c. using them as unmercifully as the *Spaniards* had done the Natives of *Hispaniola*. Whereupon some of the *Indians* run away to the Woods and Mountains, and others stood upon their Defence; but not being in a Condition to resist the Fire-Arms, Horses, and Dogs of the *Spaniards*, they were, at length, most of them, compelled to submit to that cruel Bondage; and those that would not, were tortured, or torn in Pieces with Dogs. The *Spanish* Writers relate Abundance of incredible Stories of the Sagacity of their Dogs, in distinguishing between those who submitted to this Slavery, and those that refused to obey them. However, all agree that their Countrymen hunted those naked People with Dogs in the Woods and Mountains, as they would Wild Beasts and other Game, and frequently tore in Pieces Men, Women, and Children, in mere Sport, turning them loose before their Dogs, as they would a Hare or a Fox: And when repeated Orders came from *Spain* to use the People better, and to prohibit the making the *Indians* Slaves, those Adventurers represented to his Catholick Majesty, that they were Cannibals, and procured Leave to make Slaves of all they were pleased to denominate such. And this is one Reason, so many of the *American* Nations have been represented as Cannibals in *Europe*: Nothing short of such Prejudices could have induced any Christian Prince to have suffered his Subjects to be treated so barbarously as the

Indians were by the *Spaniards*; for though SPANISH ISLANDS. they claimed their Country by Virtue of the Pope's Grant, no Prince would ever have authorized them to worry and tear in Pieces whole Nations, after they had submitted to the *Spanish* Yoke, if these Savage Adventurers had not first dressed them up in horrid Colours, and falsely accused those inoffensive People of the most barbarous and unnatural Customs.

THE City of *St. John de Porto Rico*, was founded in the Year 1514, and continued in a flourishing Condition for many Years. Sir *Francis Drake* having a good Fleet under his Command, with Land-Forces on Board, gave several Assaults to the Town in the Year 1595, but was beaten from it. The Earl of *Cumberland* had better Success; for with a much less Force, he made himself Master of the Place, the next Year, with a Fleet set out at his own Expence, assisted by two Regiments of the Queen's; for it was Queen *Elizabeth's* good Husbandry to encourage private Men to be at the Expence of such Expeditions to the *West-Indies*, only lending them her Ships and Men. It was not often she put the Publick to the whole Expence of them. But it was with great Hazard and Difficulty, the Earl carried the Town of *Porto Rico*, though thus assisted; for in an Assault, he made upon the Place, he fell from a Rock into the Sea, in his Armour, and remained so long under Water, before his People could get him out, that he was almost dead, and Sir *John Berkley* continued the Attack till the Earl recovered; soon after which, the Enemy abandoned the Town, and retired into their Forts, and these also surrendered two or three Days afterwards. The Earl had determined to keep Possession of *Porto Rico*, and from thence to have attacked the *Spanish* Settlements on the Continent and Islands, after he should be reinforced from *England*; but losing more than half his Men by the Bloody-Flux, in a very short Time, he was compelled to set Sail for *England*, on the 14th of *August*, with much less Treasure than he expected to have met with here; for the *Spaniards*, having Notice of his coming, had

SPANISH ISLANDS. had carried off or concealed all that was valuable. The best Prize he made was eighty Pieces of Brass-Cannon he found in the Town and Forts. He demanded a great Sum of the *Spaniards* to ransom the Town from being burnt, which they promised to pay him; but finding his Men rot so fast, they neglected to pay the Money; and though the Earl was pressed to set the City on Fire, on their disappointing him, he left the Town standing, only demolishing their Forts.

Virgin Isles. THE *Virgin Islands*, situate on the East Side of *Porto Rico*, are exceeding small.

Trinidad. THE Island of *Trinidad* is situate in the *Atlantick Ocean*, between 60 and 61

Degrees West Longitude, and between 10 **SPANISH ISLANDS.** and 11 Degrees North Latitude, ninety Miles long, and sixty broad, separated from the Continent of *Andalusia*, in *Terra Firma*, by the narrow Streight of *Boco del Drago*, eighty Miles North-West of the River *Oroonoque*; an unhealthful, but fruitful Soil, producing Sugar, Tobacco, Indico, Cotton, Ginger, and *Indian Corn*.

MARGARETTA is situate in 64 Degrees West Longitude, and 11 Degrees 30 Minutes North Latitude, sixty Miles North of the Continent of *Terra Firma*, and 200 West of *Trinity*, being fifty Miles long and twenty-four broad; there is very little Wood or Water in this Island.



A M A Z O N I A.

AMAZONIA. **AMAZONIA**, or the Country of the *Amazons*, is situate between 50 and 70 Degrees of West Longitude, and between the Equator, and 15 Degrees of South Latitude, bounded by the Province of *Terra Firma* on the North, by *Brazil* on the East, by the Province of *La Plata* on the South, and by *Peru* on the West.

It is generally a flat Country, abounding in Woods, Lakes, Rivers, Bogs, and Morasses. The chief River, and one of the largest in the World, is that called the *River of Amazons*, which is formed by two large Rivers, the one rising in the Province of *Quito*, a little South of the Equator, in 76 Degrees of West Longitude, and the other called *Xauxa*, rising in the Lake of *Bourbon*, near the *Andes*, in 10 Degrees South Latitude. These two Rivers joining on the Borders of *Peru* and *Amazonia*, in 3 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, from thence take the Name of *Amazon*, and run East, upwards of 2000 Miles, and then inclining to the North, fall into the *Atlantick Ocean* by several Channels, that overflow the Country, which, near the River, looks

like 'a Sea in the Time of the Rains; **AMAZONIA.** these last near half the Year; but it is not to be understood, that it rains constantly during that Season here, or in any other Country between the Tropicks. The Mornings are generally fair, and the heavy Rains seldom fall till Three or Four in the Afternoon; and at the Beginning, and towards the End of the Season, there are only two or three moderate Showers in a Day. There are a Multitude of Rivers that fall into this, both on the North and South, and it is said to be thirty Fathoms deep, 500 Leagues from its Mouth; and as it runs almost cross the broadest Part of *South America*, it is computed to be between 4000 and 5000 Miles in Length, including all its Windings,

THE Air is observed to be cooler here under the Equator, almost, than it is about either Tropick, as it is in other Countries, under the same Parallel; because the Rains continue longer here. The Country is more flooded, and the Clouds screen them from the Sun when it is vertical, and the Days are near two Hours shorter under the Equinoctial, than they are under

AMAZONIA. der the Tropick; besides there is a brisk Easterly Wind, which sets from the *Atlantick* Ocean up the River so strong, that Vessels are carried up against the Stream, and perform the Voyage almost as soon up the River as down it, which is usually about eight Months.

ALL the Trees here are Ever-Greens, and they have Fruits, Flowers and Herbage all the Year round. Their Fruits are Cocoa-Nuts, Ananas, or Pine-Apples, Guavas, Bananas, and such other Fruits, as are usually found between the Tropicks. Their Forest and Timber-Trees, are Cedar, Brasil-Wood, Oak, Ebony, Logwood, Iron-Wood, so called from its Weight and Hardness, the Caneſa, or Cinnamon, as it is called from its Spicy Bark, and several Sorts of Dying Wood.

THEY have also *Indian* Corn, and the Cassavi Root, (of which they make Flour and Bread;) Tobacco, Cotton, Sugar, Yams, Potatoes, Sarsaparilla, and other Roots. They have also Plenty of Venison, Fish and Fowl, among which they mention Deer, *Indian* Sheep and Goats, Guanoes Manatee, Armadilloes, Tortoise, and vast Flocks of Parrots of all Colours, which serve them for Food, and their Feathers, for Ornament.

THE Natives, are of the ordinary Stature of Men: They have good Features, long black Hair, and black Eyes, and their Complexion is a Copper Colour; whereas the Natives of *Africa*, in the same Latitude, on the opposite Side of the *Atlantick*, are all Negroes.

As to the Nation of *Amazons*, which were said to give Name to the River and Country, they are now no where to be found, any more than the Giants and Cannibals, the first Adventurers mentioned. The People are generally acknowledged now to have as much Humanity, or more, than the *Europeans*, who invaded them; and to have a Genius for Painting, and some Mechanick Arts; particularly, they make good Joyners Work, though they have no other Tools than such as were edg'd with sharp Stones. They also spin and weave themselves Cotton Garments, and are pretty decently clothed: Their Earthen-Ware

AMAZONIA. also is much admired; but I do not perceive they have learnt to make Bricks, or build with Stone, the Materials of their Houses being of Wood, Thatch and Clay; but one Floor, and built usually on some Eminence, near the River Side, to avoid the Inundation.

THE Banks of every River, as they relate, are inhabited by a distinct People, commanded by their respective Caciques, or Sovereigns, who are distinguished from their Subjects by Coronets of beautiful Feathers; their Arms are Bows, Arrows, and Spears, and they make War on each other by Water as well as Land; but have no other Boats than Canoes, which are great Trees made hollow: Whatever their Pretensions are for War, their principal End in it, is to make Slaves; however it is said they use their Slaves with great Humanity, and never sell them to Foreigners.

THEY worship Images, and carry them with them in their Expeditions; but I do not find they have Temples dedicated to any Gods, or any other Priests. They countenance both Polygamy and Concubinage. As to the Gold and Silver Mines the *Spaniards* went in search of when they first discovered the River of *Amazon*, I cannot learn they have met with any here though they find some Gold in the Rivulets, that fall into the River *Amazon*, near its Sources in *Peru*. After the River is swoln to any Magnitude, there is no more Gold to be found; and this I do not doubt is the Reason, that neither the *Spaniards*, or *Portuguese*, have planted any Colonies in the lower Parts of it: The *Spaniards* made great Efforts from *Peru*, to subdue this Country, while they had a Notion it abounded with Gold; but seem to have neglected the Discovery, ever since they were undeceived in this Particular; and indeed they have a larger Dominion already in *America*, than they can defend; which is a sufficient Reason for their slighting such Countries, as do not produce Gold or Silver.

THE River *Amazon* was accidentally discovered by *Gonzalo Pizarro*, Brother to the Marquis, who conquered *Peru*. He was then Governor of the Province of *Quito*,

AMAZONIA.

Quito, where some *Indians* assured him, that to the Eastward of *Quito*, on the other side the Mountains of *Andes*, were Countries that abounded not only in Cinnamon, but in Gold, more than any Countries the *Spaniards* had hitherto discovered, though they were exceeding difficult of Access, on Account of the Rocks and Precipices they must first pass, and the Woods and Morasses on the other Side of them, and the little Provisions they must expect to meet with in a Desert, and uninhabited Country; and what would render their March extremely troublesome, were the heavy Rains that fall under, and near the Equator for the greatest part of the Year. But nothing could deter *Pizarro* from an Expedition, wherein he expected to meet with Mountains of Gold in a literal Sense. He made extraordinary Preparations therefore for his difficult and hazardous Undertaking, assembled 340 Veteran *Spaniards* of whom 150 were Horse, and took with him 4000 able-bodied *Indians*, some of them Soldiers; but most of them employed in carrying his Ammunition, Provision and Baggage, and driving some Thousands of *Indian* Sheep and Hogs before them, which he proposed to kill by the Way. And thus provided, he set out from the City of *Quito* at Christmas, in the Year 1539.

AN Account of which Expedition we find thus related by *De-la-Vega*, in his Royal Commentaries of *Peru*. The General (says the Royal Historian) having continued his march some few Days, there happened so terrible an Earthquake, that many Houses in the Villages, where they then were, fell to the Ground; the Earth opened in many Places, and terrible were the Lightnings and Thunders, and very quick, almost without intermission.

AFTER the Storm was over, which continued forty or fifty Days, they prepared to pass the *Andes*, or Snowy Mountains, for which, though they had made good Provision, yet the Climate was so extremely cold, by the great Quantities of Snow which fell, that many *Indians*, who went thin in their Cloathing perished. The *Spaniards*, that they might make haste out of the Snow and Cold, left their Cattle

and Provisions behind them, expecting to find sufficient Supplies of all Things at the next Place where the *Indians* inhabited. But the Matter succeeded otherwise; for having passed the Mountains, they entered into a Country so barren, that it was void of all Inhabitants; wherefore doubling their Journeys to get out of it, they came, at length, to a Province and People called *Cumaco*, situated at the Foot of a Vulcano, where they found Plenty of Provisions; but the Country was so wet, that, for the Space of two Months which they remained there, it never ceased one Day from raining.

IN this Province, called *Cumaco*, or *Canela*, which is situate under the Equinoctial, or very near it, grow the Cinnamon-Trees, as they call them, which they went in search of as well as Gold. These Trees are lofty, bearing a Leaf as big as the Laurel, with a small Sort of Fruit, which grows in Clusters like the Acorn; some grow wild in the Mountains, and produce Fruit; but not so good as that which is gathered from the Trees, which the *Indians* plant and cultivate in their own Grounds.

THE *Spaniards* found that in *Cumaco*, and the adjacent Countries, the *Indians* went naked, without any Cloaths, only the Women, for Modesty-sake, wore a little Flap before them: The Climate is so excessively hot, that they need no Cloaths (says *De-la-Vega*) and is so subject to Rains, that they would become rotten in a short Time if they had them.

GONZALO PIZARRO, leaving the greatest Part of his People in *Cumaco*, took with him a small Party of such as he esteemed most active, to search for some Pass leading out of the Country; for as yet, the Way for an 100 Leagues together, had been nothing but Mountains, Deserts and Woods, which they were forced to lay open, by the Hatchet and Strength of their Arms; and sometimes the *Indians*, who were their Guides, deceived them, carrying them out of the Way by Mountains and Deserts, and Difficult Passages (where they sustained Hunger and Cold, without any other Sustenance than Herbs and Roots, and wild Fruits) and conducting them through

AMAZONIA. through By-ways, to avoid the Country of their Friends and Confederates.

WITH such Labours and Sufferings as these, which may rather be fancied than described, they came at length to a Province, called *Cuca*, which was more populous than any they had formerly passed. Here Provisions were plentiful, and the Cacique, or King of the Country, came in a peaceable Manner to welcome them, and brought them Provisions.

IN these Parts, they remained two Months, in Expectation of the coming of those *Spaniards*, whom they had left in *Cumaco*, and had directed to follow them by such Traces and Marks as they should find of the Way they had taken before them. Their Companions being come up and refreshed after their Journey, they marched by the Banks of a great River, for the Space of fifty Leagues, in all which Way, they neither found Bridge nor Ford.

AT length they came to a Place; where the whole River falls from the Top of a Rock, above 200 Fathoms high, which Cataract, or Falling of the Waters, makes a Noise, that is heard above six Leagues from the Place; at which though the *Spaniards* were amazed, yet it was much more wonderful to see above forty or fifty Leagues lower, that immense Quantity of Water contracted and straitened within a Channel, made by one great Rock. This Channel is so narrow, that from one Side to the other, it is not above twenty Feet wide; but so high, that from the Top where the *Spaniards* made their Bridge, was, 200 Fathoms from the Water. *Gonzalo Pizarro*, and his Captains, considering there was no other Passage to be found over the River, and that it was necessary to pass to the other Side, because the Country was Barren on that Side where they were, agreed to make a Bridge over the Top of the Rock.

THE *Indians*, on the opposite Side, though few in Number, stoutly defended the Pass, were driven from it by the Fire of the Muskets; and the Pass being now clear, the *Spaniards* fell to Work on the Bridge of Timber, which cost much Labour before the first Beam could be pass-

ed over to the opposite Rock; by the Help of which, a second was more easily laid, and then other Pieces of Timber; so that by Degrees they formed a Bridge, over which both Men and Horses securely passed. After which they marched by the Side of the River over Mountains so thick with Wood, that they were forced to open their Way again with the Hatchet. Through these Difficulties, they came at length to a Country called *Guema*, where the *Spaniards*, and their *Indian* Servants, were forced again to sustain themselves with Herbs and Roots, and with tender Sprouts of Trees. Thus with Famine and perpetual Rains, many of the *Spaniards* fell sick and died. They arrived afterwards at a Country, where the Natives were more civilized than the former; for they eat Maize, or *Indian* Corn, and clothed themselves with Garments of Cotton; but still their Climate was subject to violent Rains.

WHILST they staid in this Place they sent out Parties every Way, to see if they could discover a better Country; but they all returned with the same News, that they met with nothing but wild Mountains full of Bogs, Lakes and Moorish Grounds, over which was no Passage. Hereupon they resolved to build a Brigantine, or Vessel, to ferry over from one Side of the River to the other, which now was become two Leagues broad. In order whereunto, the first Thing to be done was to set up a Smith's Forge, for Nails and Iron Work, which they made of the Horse Shoes, they had killed for Food and some Iron Bars they had carried with them; but Iron was now become more scarce than Gold.

GONZALO PIZARRO, though chief Commander, was the first that laid his Hand to the Ax to hew down the Timber, and to make the Charcoal, which was requisite to forge the Iron, and was always the most forward in every Office, though never so mean; that so giving a good Example, none might excuse himself. The Rosin, which issued from certain Trees, served them instead of Pitch, and their old Shirts and Rags were made Use of instead

AMAZONIA.

of Ockam, to caulk the Seams of their Vessel, which being in this Manner finished they launched into the Water with great joy and triumph, imagining that herewith they should quickly escape out of all their Dangers and Difficulties. But it proved otherwise, for a few Days shewed the contrary, and gave them Cause to repent that they had ever made it.

ALL the Gold they had gathered, which amounted to above the Value of 100,000 Pieces of Eight, with Abundance of Emeralds, some of which were of great Value, as also their Iron and Iron Work, and whatsoever was of any Esteem, they loaded on their Vessel; and such as were weak and sick, and not able to travel, were also put on Board. And now, after a Journey almost of 200 Leagues, they departed from this Place, taking their Course down the Stream, some by Water, and others by Land, keeping such a convenient Distance from each other, that at Night they always joined and lodged together, which Journey was performed with great Difficulty; for those on the Land were forced to open a great Part of the Way with Hatchet and Bill, and those on the Water were put to hard Labour, to keep the Vessel from being forcibly carried down by the Current from the Company on Shore. When at any Time their Passage was interrupted by some Mountain, so that when they could not keep near the River, they then ferried to the other Side by Help of their Vessel, and four Canoes they had made; but this was a great Hindrance to them, and very grievous to Men starving and perishing with Hunger.

HAVING, in this Manner, travelled for the Space of two Months, they at length met with certain *Indians*, who by Signs, and some Words which were understood by their *Indian* Servants, gave them Intelligence, that about ten Days Journey from thence, they would find a Country well peopled, plentiful of Provisions, and abounding with Gold and other Riches, of which they were in pursuit; and further signified to them, that this Country was situated on the Banks of another great River, which joined and fell into that

wherein they now were. The *Spaniards* being encouraged with this News, *Gonzalo Pizarro* made *Francisco de Orellana* Captain of his Brigantine, or Vessel, and thereon put fifty Soldiers on Board, giving them Orders to pass down the Stream to that Place where the two Rivers met, and that there leaving the Goods he had then on Board, he should lade his Vessel with Provisions, and return towards them, with all Speed imaginable, to relieve them in that great Distress; many of the *Spaniards* being already dead, and more *Indians*, who from 4000 were now reduced to half the Number.

ACCORDING to these Orders, *Francisco de Orellana* entered on the Voyage, and in the Space of three Days, without Oars or Sail, only by Force of the Current, was carried to the Confluence of the two Rivers, mentioned by the *Indians*, but found no Provisions there; whereupon, *Orellana* pretending it was impossible to return to *Pizarro* against the Stream, resolved to set up for himself; and accordingly casting off all Care and Regard for *Pizarro*, and his Companions then in Distress, he resolved to continue his Voyage to the Mouth of the River, and then go over into *Spain*, and obtain the Government of those Countries for himself: But this cruel Resolution was opposed by many of those who were then with him, who told him plainly, that he was not to exceed the Orders of his Captain-General, and that it was inhuman to forsake his Companions in their great Distress, knowing how useful and necessary that Brigantine was to them. In this Point none was more zealous than *Friar Gaspar Carvajal*, and a young Gentleman, Native of *Badajoz*, named *Hernando Sanchez de Vargas*, whom those of the contrary Opinion made their Chief, and were so warm in their Debates on this Subject, that the Quarrel had come to Blows, had not *Orellana*, with fair Words appeased the Tumult: However, he managed so artfully afterwards with those who had opposed his Intentions, that he enticed them all over to his Party, and then rudely treated the poor Friar, whom he had exposed to the same Famine and Misery,

AMAZONIA.

AMAZONIA.

Misery, (had it not been for Respect to his Habit and Profession) as he did *Sanchez de Vargas*, whom he left in that Desert, encompassed with high Mountains on the one Side, and a great River on the other, to perish by Famine.

FRANCISCO de Orellana afterwards found some Provisions amongst the Nations on the River below; but because the Women came out at first with their Husbands to oppose his Landing, he gave it the name of the *River of Amazons*.

PROCEEDING yet farther down this River, they found these *Indians* more civil than the other, who received them amicably, admiring the Brigantine, and Men so strangely habited. These treated the *Spaniards* hospitably and furnished them with as much Provision as they had Occasion for. *Orellana* remained here, therefore, several Weeks, and built another Brigantine, for they were very much straitened for Room in the first, and having fitted it up as well as they were able, they adventured out to Sea, sailing along the Coast of *Caribbiana*, about 200 Leagues to the Northward, till they arrived at the Island of the *Holy Trinity*, having escaped such Dangers that they often gave themselves over for lost. At this Island, *Orellana* bought a Ship, with which he sailed into *Spain*, where he requested his Majesty's Commission, for the Conquest and Government of the Country of the *Amazons* as he was pleased to stile it. To make the Enterprize appear the more desirable, he alledged, that it was a Country abounding with Gold, Silver, and Precious Stones, and in Testimony thereof produced the Riches which he had brought with him; whereupon his Majesty granted the Request he made, for the Government of what he should conquer there, and *Orellana* was joined by 500 Volunteers, the greatest Part of them brisk young Gentlemen, and Persons of Honour with whom he embarked at *St. Lucar*, for the River *Amazon*, in the Year 1554; but he lost one of his Ships in his Voyage thither, and met with so many Difficulties and Misfortunes before he had sailed 100 Leagues up the River,

AMAZONIA.

that he abandoned the Enterprize, and died in his Return Home.

As to *Gonzalo Pizarro*, whom we left in such Distress after *Francisco de Orellana* was run away with the Brigantine; he first built ten or twelve Canoes, and other Floats to pass from one Side of the River to the other, as often as his March was interrupted by impassable Mountains or Morasses, and proceeded in that Manner down the River, in Hopes to meet the Brigantine they had dispatched for Provisions. At the End of two Months, they arrived at the Point where the two Rivers met; but instead of their Brigantine, and the Provisions they expected to meet with, they found only the honest *Hernan de Vargas*, who with Constancy of Mind, like a Man of Honour, had endured, with great Resolution Famine, and all the Miseries, to which he was exposed in that Solitude; and from him they received a particular Account of the Villainy of the perfidious *Orellana*, which *Pizarro* could scarce credit, having hitherto entertained an entire Confidence in the Man.

THE General, however, putting a good Face upon the Matter, cheered up his Men, and encouraged them with Hopes of better Fortune; telling them, that they ought, like *Spaniards*, to bear with Equality of Mind these Labours and Disappointments, and yet greater, if any such could be; that the more Danger, the more Honour, and the greater their Renown would be in History, which would transmit the Fame of their Adventures down to future Ages. The Soldiers, observing the Chearfulness of their General, who had most Cause to resent *Orellana's* Usage of him, took Heart, and continued their March by the Banks of the River, sometimes on one Side, and sometimes on the other.

BUT the Difficulty of carrying the Horses over upon Floats (for there still remained about fifty of their Number) cannot be expressed, any more than the Famine they were exposed to. However, the *Indians* who remained alive, served their Masters with great Faithfulness and Affection in these Extremities, bringing them

AMAZONIA. them Herbs, Roots, and Wild Fruit; Snakes, and other Vermin they found in those Mountains, all which went down with the *Spaniards*; nor could they have subsisted without such Kind of Food.

AND now *Gonzalo Pizarro*, being resolved to return to *Peru*, left the River, and took his Way more to the Northward, which proved shorter by 100 Leagues than the Way they came, but no less difficult, being forced to cut their Way frequently through the Woods; and for Want of other Provisions, they now eat up all their remaining Horses and Dogs: For the 4000 *Indians*, who used to purvey for them, all died in this Expedition; and there were but fourscore *Spaniards*, who returned to *Quito* alive, and these almost without Cloaths, and so Sunburnt and emaciated with the Fatigue and Want of Food, that their nearest Friends scarce knew them.

WITH such insupportable Hardships and Hazards, did the first *Spanish* Adventurers struggle, in search of Gold, even when they had before acquired enough, one would have thought, to have satisfied the most boundless Avarice. I question whether *Gonzalo Pizarro*, who was one of the Proprietors of the Mines of *Potosi*, had not amassed more than 1,000,000 of Crowns before he entered upon this Expedition.

PETER de Orfua, who afterwards obtained a Commission from the Governor of *Peru*, in the Year 1550, to subdue the Provinces bordering on the River *Amazon*, embarked on the River *Xauxa* in *Peru*, with 700 armed *Spaniards*, and 2000 *Indians*, and sailed down the Stream 200 or 300 Leagues, till he came to the Confluence of the two Rivers *Amazon* and *Xauxa*, and continuing his Voyage afterwards 200 Leagues farther, was killed in a Mutiny of his Men, which put a Period to that Enterprize.

SEVERAL other Adventurers made the like Attempts afterwards, but most of them proved unfortunate, till two Monks and some Soldiers, who set out with *John de Palacios* from *Quito* in *Peru*, in the

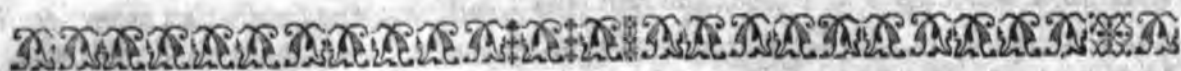
Year 1635, and embarking on the River *Amazon*, where it first becomes navigable, sailed the whole Length of it, till they arrived at *Paria* in *Brazil*, which lies on the South Side of the Mouth of this great River: But their Captain *John Palacios* was killed in a Skirmish with the Natives in their Passage.

THE Friars having given an Account of their Voyage to the Governor of *Brazil*, he ordered Sloops and Boats to be provided, on which he embarked seventy Portuguese and 2000 *Indians*; and in October, 1637, ordered them to sail up the River, under the Command of *Texeira*, a Mariner of great Skill and Experience, who by the Help of the Easterly Wind, which generally blows here, sailed up against the Current, till he arrived at *Les Reys*, a Town of *Quito* in *Peru*; and the River not being navigable higher for his Vessels, he left them there, and went by Land to the City of *Quito*, where he was kindly received by the *Spanish* Governor, and furnished with whatever he wanted to facilitate his Return to *Brazil*: And the Governor sent Father *De Acuna*, and another *Spanish* Jesuit down the River with him, ordering them to embark for *Spain*, when they arrived at *Brazil*, and communicate the Observations they should make in this Voyage to his Catholick Majesty; and embarking again at *Les Reyes*, on the River *Amazon*, with the two Jesuits, in the Month of February, 1638-9, arrived at *Paria* in *Brazil* the December following; from whence *De Acuna* and his Companion went over to *Spain*, and published a Relation of their Voyage in 1640, which is the best Account of this River, and the Countries bordering upon it, that is extant.

FROM these Relations we learn, that the Head of the River *Amazon* rises in *Quito*, almost under the Equator, in 76 Degrees of Western Longitude, and running South-East till it unites its Waters with the River *Xauxa*, continues its Course almost due East, in the Latitude of 4 Degrees, 26 Degrees of Longitude, and then turning to the North by many Mouths,

AMAZONIA. discharges itself into the *Atlantic Ocean*, almost under the Equator. They compute that with all its Turnings and Windings, it does not run less than 1800 Leagues; and observe, that it is ordinarily two or three Leagues broad; but in the rainy Season overflows the flat Country on the Right and Left, and at the Mouth of it is fifty or sixty Leagues broad; that from the River Ne-

gro, which falls into it about 500 Leagues from the Mouth, it is generally thirty or forty Fathoms deep; and up higher, from eight Fathoms to twenty; that there is one Streight, where it is not above a Quarter of a Mile over; and that there are near 200 Rivers which fall into it, either on the North, or South Side of the River. AMAZONIA.



B R A S I L.

BRASIL. **B**RASIL is situate between 35 and 60 Degrees of West Longitude, and between the Equinoctial and 35 Degrees of South Latitude, bounded by the River *Amazon* and the *Atlantick Ocean* on the North, by the same Ocean East, by the River *Plata* South, and by the Mountains which divide it from *La Plata* and *Paragua* on the West; and consists of sixteen Captainships or Provinces; whereof the Northern Captainships are, 1. *Paria*. 2. *Marrignan*. 3. *Siara*. 4. *Petagues*. 5. *Rio Grande*. 6. *Payraba*. 7. *Tamara*; and, 8. *Pernambuco*. The middle Division comprehends, 9. *Seregippi*. 10. *Babia*, or the Bay of *All Saints*. 11. *Ilbeos*. 12. *Porte Seguro*; and, 13. *Spirito Santo*. The South Division contains, 14. *Rio Janeiro*. 15. *St. Vincent*; and 16. *Del Rey*.

THE Islands of most Note on the Coast of *Brasil*, are, 1. *Fernando*, in 3 Degrees South Latitude. 2. *St. Barbara*, in 18 Degrees South Latitude; and, 3. *St. Catherine*, in 28 Degrees South Latitude.

THE *Atlantick Ocean* washes all the Coast from North to South, in which are the following Harbours, viz. 1. That of *Pernambuco*, or the *Receif*, in 7 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude. 2. The Harbour or Bay of *All Saints*, in 13 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 3. The Harbour of *Porto Seguro* in 16 $\frac{1}{4}$ Degrees of South Latitude. 4. The Port and Harbour of *Rio Janeiro*, in 23 Degrees South Latitude. 5. The Port of *St. Vin-*

cent, in 25 Degrees South Latitude. 6. The *BRASIL* Harbour of *St. Gabriel*; and, 7. The Port of *Salvador*, on the North Shore of the River *La Plata*, near the Entrance of it.

THE principal Capes are, 1. *Cape Roque*, in 4 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 2. *Cape St. Augustin*, in 8 Degrees South Latitude. 3. *Cape Frio*, in 23 Degrees South Latitude; and, 4. *Cape St. Mary*, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, the most Southerly Promontory of *Brasil*.

THE chief Rivers are, 1. *Siara*, which gives Name to a Province. It runs from the South-West to the North-East, and falls into the *Atlantick Ocean*, in 4 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, near the Town of *Siara*. 2. *Rio Grande*, which gives Name to a Province, runs from West to East, and falls into the same Ocean, in 5 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 3. *Paraiba* River, which runs from West to East, and divides the Province of *Payraba* in two equal Parts, falling into the Sea, in 6 Degrees odd Minutes, South Latitude. 4. *Tamara* River, which runs parallel to the last, and falls into the Sea at the Town of *Tamara*. 5. *Rio Real*, which falls into the Sea, a little North of the Bay of *All Saints*. 6. *Rio St. Antonio*, which divides the Province of *Ilbeos* from *Seguro*, and falls into the Sea, in 16 Degrees South Latitude. 7. *Ilbeos* River, which runs parallel to the last River, and falls into the Sea near the Town

BRASIL of *Ilheos*, in 15 Degrees South Latitude.

8. *Rio Dolce*, which falls into the Sea, in 20 Degrees South Latitude. There are also three Rivers which run near, and parallel to it, viz. The River of *Crocodiles*, the *Alequa*, and *St. Michael*. 9 *Pariba* River runs through the Province of *Spirito Sancto*, and falls into the Ocean in 22 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 10. *Rio Janeiro* runs through the Province to which it gives its Name, and falls into the Ocean, in 23½ Degrees of South Latitude. 11. The River of *Plata*, which makes the Southern Boundary of this Province.

THE Sea Coast is generally a flat Shore, but prettily intermixed with Woods and Savannahs, or Meadow Grounds; and the Trees between the Equinoctial and the Tropick of *Capricorn*, are all Evergreens. The Inland Part of *Brazil* is Mountainous, and particularly a long Chain of Mountains on the West, which separate it from the *Spanish* Territories, in which are some of the richest Mines in *America*. Here also are some extensive Lakes and Fountains, from whence issue innumerable Rivers, which fall into the Rivers *Amazon* and *La Plata*, or run cross the Country from West to East, and discharge their Waters into the *Atlantick* Ocean, and these are of great use to the *Portuguese*, in turning their Sugar Mills. As the North of *Brazil* lies near the Equinoctial, they have the like Deluges of Rain, as other Countries have, that lie under the same Parallels, and the Low Lands annually flooded; but in the Southern Provinces, the Weather is temperate, constantly refreshed by Sea-Breezes, or the Winds from the Western Mountains.

As to the Winds, Air, and Seasons, in that Part of *Brazil*, which lies between 5 Degrees South Latitude, and the Tropick of *Capricorn*, Mr. *Dampier* has given us this Account of it.

HE observes, that the Winds and Seasons are the very Reverse here, to what they are in other Parts of the World in the same Latitudes; for whereas the dry Season comes on in other Places South of the Equinoctial, when the Sun goes to the

Northward of the Equator, and the wet ^{BRASIL.} Season begins when the Sun returns to the Southward; here the wet Seasons begins in *April*, when the South-East Winds set in with violent Tornadoes, Thunder and Lightning: And in *September*, when the Wind shifts to the North-East, it brings with it a clear Sky and fair Weather; and this is the Time of their Sugar Harvest.

THERE are but two Winds blow upon this Coast, viz. the South-East from *April* to *September*, and the North-East from *September* to *April* again: But thirty or forty Leagues out at Sea, they met with the constant Trade-Wind, which blows in the *Atlantick* Ocean, all the Year round, from the Eastward, with very little Variation.

THE chief Towns in the Province of *Paria*, are 1. *Paria* or *Belm*, situate near the Mouth of the River *Amazon*. 2 *Corupa*, about fifty Leagues South-West of *Paria*.

THE chief Town in the Province of *Marignan*, is *St. Lewis de Marignan*, situate in a fine Bay, formed by the Mouths of three great Rivers. The chief Town of *Siara* is of the same Name, situate at the Mouth of the River *Siara*.

THE chief Town of *Rio Grande* is *Tiquares*, situate on the Banks of the River *Grande*.

THE chief Town of *Parayba* is of the same Name, and situate on the River *Parayba*.

THE chief Town of *Tamara* is of the same Name.

THE chief Town of *Pernambuco* is of the same Name, situate on a Peninsula, in 7 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude. This was the Capital of all the Settlements the *Dutch* formerly possessed in *Brazil*, and was taken from them by the *Portuguese*, in 1647. The City of *Olinda*, also, is situated a little North of the Town of *Pernambuco*. *St. Augustin* is situate in the same Province, on the most Easterly Promontory of *Brazil*, which lies in 8 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude.

THE chief Town in the Captainship of *Babia de Todos Santos*, or the Bay *All Saints*, is *St. Salvador*, situate on a Hill

BRASIL. Hill above the Harbour, or *Bay of All Saints*, in 13 Degrees of South Latitude, and is the Capital of *Brasil*, which it deserves to be, according to *Dampier*, if we regard the Beauty of its Buildings, its Dimensions, Trade, or Revenues. The Harbour is capable of receiving Ships of the greatest Burthen, the Entrance whereof is guarded by a strong Fort, called *St. Antonio*; and there are other small Forts which Command the Harbour, one whereof is built upon a Rock, about half a Mile from the Shore: Close by this Fort, all Ships must pass that anchor here, and must ride also within half a mile of it at farthest, between this and another Fort (that stands on a Point at the inner Part of the Harbour, and is called the *Dutch Fort*) but must ride nearest to the former all along against the Town, where there is good holding Ground, and less exposed to the Southerly Winds that blow very hard here.

THEY commonly set in about *April*, but blow hardest in *May*, *June*, *July* and *August*. But the Place where the Ships ride, is exposed to these Winds, not above three Points of the Compass.

BESIDES these, there is another Fort fronting the Harbour, and standing on the Hill, upon which the Town stands. The Town itself consists of about 2000 Houses, the major Part of which cannot be seen from the Harbour; but so many as appear in Sight, with a great Mixture of Trees between them, and all placed on a rising Hill, make a very pleasant Prospect.

THERE are in the Town thirteen Churches, Chapels, Hospitals and Monasteries, and one Nunnery, viz. the *Ecclesia Major*, or Cathedral, and the *Jesuits College*, which are the chief, and both in Sight from the Harbour: *St. Antonio*, *St. Barbara*, both Parish Churches; the *Franciscans*, and the *Dominicans*, and two Convents of *Carmelites*; a Chapel for Seamen close by the Sea-Side, where Boats commonly land, and the Seamen go immediately to Prayers; another Chapel for poor People, at the farther End of the same Street, which runs along by the Shore, and a third Chapel for Soldiers at

the Edge of the Town, remote from the **BRASIL.** Sea, and an Hospital in the Middle of the Town. The Nunnery stands at the outer Edge of the Town next the Fields; wherein by Report, there are seventy Nuns. Here lives an Archbishop, who has a fine Palace in the Town, and the Governor's Palace is a fair Stone-Building, and looks handsome to the Sea, though but indifferently furnished within; both *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* in their Plantations abroad, affecting to have large Houses, but are little curious about Furniture, except Pictures. The Houses of the Town are two or three Stories high, the Walls thick and strong, being built with Stone, with the Covering of Pantiles, and many of them have Balconies. The principal Streets are large, and all of them paved or pitched with small Stones. There are also Parades in the most eminent Places of the Town, and many Gardens as well within the Town as in the Out Parts of it; wherein are Fruit-Trees, Herbs, Salad-ing, and Flowers in great Variety, but ordered with no great Care or Art.

HERE are about 400 Soldiers in Garrison; they commonly draw up and exercise in a large Parade before the Governor's House, and many of them attend him when he goes abroad. The Soldiers are decently clad in brown Linen, which in these hot Countries is far better than Woollen. Beside the Soldiers in Pay, he can soon have some Thousands of Men up in Arms upon Occasion. The Magazine is on the Skirts of the Town, on a small Rising between the Nunnery and the Soldiers Church. It is big enough to hold 2000 or 3000 Barrels of Powder; but it seldom has more than 100. There are always a Band of Soldiers to guard it, and Centinels looking out both Day and Night.

A GREAT many Merchants always reside at *Babia*, for it is a Place of great Trade. *Dampier* found here above thirty great Ships from *Europe*, with two of the King of *Portugal's* Ships of War for their Convoy; besides two Ships that traded to *Africa* only, either to *Angola*, *Gambia*, or other Places on the Coast of *Guinea*; and Abundance

BRASIL. Abundance of small Craft, that only run to and fro on this Coast, carrying Commodities from one Part of *Brasil* to another.

THE Merchants that live here, are said to be rich, and to have many Negro Slaves in their Houses, both Men and Women: They are chiefly *Portuguese*, Foreigners having but little Commerce with them; yet here was one Mr. *Cock*, an *English* Merchant, *Dampier* relates, a Gentleman of good Repute, who had a Patent to be *English* Consul, but did not care to take upon him any publick Character; because *English* Ships seldom came hither, and there had been none in eleven or twelve Years, before *Dampier* was there, in the Year 1699, here was also a *Dane*, and a *French* Merchant or two; but all have their Effects transported to, and from *Europe* in *Portuguese* Ships, none of any other Nation being admitted to trade hither. There is a Custom-House by the Sea-Side, where all Goods imported or exported are entered: And to prevent Abuses, there are five or six Boats, that take their Turns to row about the Harbour, searching any Boats they suspect to be running of Goods.

THE chief Commodities that the *European* Ships bring hither, are Linen Cloaths, both coarse and fine, some Woollens; as Bays, Serges, Perpetuanas, &c. Hats, Stockings, both of Silk and Thread, Biscuit-Bread, Wheat-Flour, Wine (chiefly Port) Oil, Olive, Butter, Cheese, &c. and Salt Beef and Pork would there also be good Commodities. They bring hither also Iron, and all Sorts of Iron Tools, Pewter Vessels of all Sorts; as Dishes, Plates Spoons, &c. Looking-Glasses, Beads and other Toys; and the Ships that touch at *St. Jago*, bring thence Cotton Cloth, which is afterwards sent to *Angola*.

THE *European* Ships carry from thence Sugar, Tobacco, either in Roll or Snuff, never in Leaf. These are the Staple Commodities; besides which, here are Dye-Woods, as Fustick, &c. with Woods for other Uses, as Speckled Wood, *Brasil*, &c. They also carry home Raw Hides, Tallow, Train Oil of Whales, &c. Here are also

Monkeys, Parrots, Parroquets, &c. which **BRASIL.** the Seamen carry Home.

THE Sugar of this Country is much better than that which we bring home from our Plantations: For all the Sugar that is made here is clayed, which makes it whiter and finer than our Muscovado, as we call our unrefined Sugar. Our Planters seldom refine any with Clay, unless sometimes a little to send home as Presents to their Friends in *England*.

THEIR Way of doing it, is by taking some of the whitest Clay, and mixing it with Water, till it is like Cream; with this they fill up the Pans with Sugar, that are sunk two or three Inches below the Brim, by the Draining of the Molasses out of it; first scraping off the thin hard Crust of the Sugar, that lies at the Top, and would hinder the Water of the Clay from soaking through the Sugar of the Pan. The Refining is made by this Percolation, for ten or twelve Days Time, that the clayish Liquor lies soaking down the Pan, the white Water whitens the Sugar as it passes through it, and the gross Body of the Clay itself grows hard on the Top, and may be taken off at Pleasure, when scraping off with a Knife, the very upper Part of the Sugar, which will be a little fullyed, that which is underneath will be white almost to the Bottom: And such as is called *Brasil* Sugar, is thus whitened. When *Dampier* was here, this Sugar was sold for Fifty Shillings per Hundred, and Bottoms of the Pots, which is very coarse Sugar, for about Twenty Shillings per Hundred, both Sorts being then scarce; for here was not enough to lade the Ships, and therefore some of them were to lie here till the next Season.

THE *European* Ships, commonly arrive here in *February* or *March*, and they have generally quick Passages, finding, at that Time of the Year, brisk Gales to bring them to the Line, little Trouble then in crossing it, and brisk East-North-East Winds afterwards to bring them hither; they commonly return from hence about the latter End of *May*, or in *June*.

THE Ships that use the *Guinea* Trade, are small Vessels in Comparison of the former;

BRASIL former; they carried out from hence Rum, Sugar, the Cotton Cloths of *St. Jago*, Beads, &c. and bring in Return Gold, Ivory, and Slaves, making very good Returns.

THE Small Craft that belong to this Town, are chiefly employed in carrying *European* Goods from *Babia*, the Center of the *Brasilian* Trade, to other Places on this Coast, bringing back hither Sugar, Tobacco, &c. They are sailed chiefly with Negro Slaves, and about *Christmas* these are mostly employed in Whale-killing; for about that Time of the Year, a Sort of Whales, as they call them, are very thick on this Coast. They come also into the Harbours, and inland Lakes, where the Seamen go out and kill them. The Fat of them is boiled to Oil, the Lean is eaten by Slaves and poor People. These are said to be but small Whales, yet are so many, and so easily killed, that they get a great deal of Money by it. Those that strike them, buy their Licence for it of the King; who, it is said, receives 30,000 Dollars *per Annum* for this Fishery. All the small Vessels, that use this Coasting Traffick, are built here, and so are some Men of War also for the King's Service; and the Timber of this Country is very good and proper for this Purpose, being more strong and durable, than any we have in *Europe*, and they have enough of it.

BESIDES Merchants and others, that trade by Sea from this Port, here are other pretty wealthy Men, and several Artificers and Tradesmen of most Sorts, who, by Labour and Industry, maintain themselves very well; especially such as can arrive at the Purchase of a Negro Slave or two. And, indeed, excepting People of the lowest Degree of all, here are scarce any but what keep Slaves in their Houses. The richer Sort, besides the Slaves of both Sexes, whom they keep for servile Uses in their Houses, have Men Slaves, who wait on them abroad for State; either running by their Horses Sides when they ride out, or to carry them to and fro, on their Shoulders in the Town, when they make short Visits near Home. Every Gentle-

man, or Merchant, is provided with every **BRASIL** Thing, necessary for this Sort of Carriage.

The main Thing is a pretty large Cotton Hammock, of the *West-India* Fashion; but mostly dyed blue, with large Fringes of the same hanging down on each Side. This is carried on the Negroes Shoulders, by the Help of a Bambo, about twelve or fourteen Feet long, to which the Hammock is hung, and a Covering comes over the Pole, hanging down on each Side like a Curtain; so that the Person so carried, cannot be seen unless he pleases, but may either lie down, having Pillows for his Head, or may sit up by being a little supported with these Pillows; and by letting both his Legs hang out over one Side of the Hammock, when he hath a Mind to be seen, he puts by his Curtain, and salutes every one of his Acquaintance, whom he meets in the Streets; for they take a Piece of Pride in greeting one another from their Hammocks, and will hold long Conferences thus in the Street; but then their two Slaves, who carry the Hammock, have each a strong well-made Staff, with a fine Iron Fork at the upper End, and a sharp Iron below, like the Rest for a Musket, which they stick fast in the Ground, and let the Pole, or Bambo of the Hammock, rest upon them, till their Master's Business, or Compliments be over, there is scarce a Man of any Fashion, or a Woman, will pass the Streets, but so carried in a Hammock.

THE chief Mechanick Trades, here are Smiths, Hatters, Shoemakers, Tanners, Sawyers, Carpenters, Coopers, &c. Here are also Taylors, Butchers, &c. which last kill the Bullocks very dexterously, sticking them at one Blow with a sharp-pointed Knife in the Nape of the Neck, having first drawn them close to a Rail; but they dress them very slovenly. *Dampier* says it being *Lent* when he came hither, there was no buying any Flesh till *Easter-Eve*, when a great Number of Bullocks were killed at once in the Slaughter-Houses within the Town; Men, Women and Children flocking thither with great Joy to buy, and a Multitude of Dogs, almost starved, following them, for whom the

BRASIL. the Meat seemed fittest, it was so lean. All these Tradesmen buy Negroes, and train them up to their several Employments, which is a great Help to them; and having so frequent a Trade to *Angola*, and other Parts of *Guinea*, they have a constant Supply of Blacks, both for their Plantations and Towns. These Slaves are very useful in this Place, for Carriage as Porters; for as here is a great Trade by Sea, and the Landing-Place is at the Foot of a great Hill, too steep for drawing with Carts; so there is great Need of Slaves to carry Goods up into the Town, especially for the inferior Sort. But the Merchants have also the Convenience of a great Crane, that goes with Ropes, or Pulleys, one End of which goes up, while the other goes down. The House, in which this Crane is, stands on the Brow of the Hill towards the Sea, hanging over the Precipice, and there are Planks set shelving against the Bank, from thence to the Bottom, against which the Goods lean, or slide, as they are hoisted up, or let down. The Negro Slaves in this Town are so numerous, that they make up the greatest Part, or Bulk of the Inhabitants; every House, as I said, having some, both Men and Women of them. Many of the *Portuguese*, who are Batchelors, keep of these Black Women for Mistresses, though they know the Danger they are in of being poisoned by them, if ever they give them any Occasion of Jealousy. These Slaves also, of either Sex, will easily be engaged to do any Sort of Mischief, even to Murder, if they are hired to do it, especially in the Night.

THE chief Towns in the Province of *Ilheos*, is of the same Name, is situate on a Promontory, at the Mouth of the River *Ilheos*, and is considerable for its Sugar Mills.

THE chief Towns in the Captainship of *Porto Seguro*, are, 1. *Porto Seguro*, situate on a Rock near the Coast, in 17 Degrees of South Latitude. 2. *Santa Cruz*, three Leagues South of *Seguro* and *Santa Maria*, a little farther South. The chief Town in the Captainship of *Spirito Santo*, is *Spirito Santo*, situate on a River

of the same Name, twenty-six Miles from **BRASIL** the Coast, in 20 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude.

THE chief Towns in the Captainship of *Rio Janeiro*, are, 1. *St. Sebastian*, situate on the River *Rio Janeiro*, two Leagues from its Mouth; in 23 Degrees South Latitude. 2. *Los Reis*, twelve Miles West of *St. Sebastian*; and, 3. *St. Salvador*, over against *Cape Frio*.

THE chief Town in the Captainship of *St. Vincent*, is of the same Name, situate on a fine Bay, in 24 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, near which have lately been discovered Gold Sands; 2. *St. Paul*, situate 100 Miles North-West of *St. Vincent*, built for the Security of the Mines; and, 3. *Santos*, situate North of *St. Vincent*, on the same Bay.

AND in the Province of *Del Rey*, is situate the Town of *St. Salvador*, and several Forts have been built on the North Side of the River of *Plate*, for the Defence of the *Portuguese* Frontiers, against the *Spaniards*, who possess *Buenos Ayres*, and other Towns on the South Side of the River of *Plate*.

As to the Persons, Habits, and Customs of the *Indians* in *Brasil*, they so much resemble those of *Peru* and *La Plata*, that live under the same Parallel, that there is no Necessity of being particular on these Heads, any more than on that of Animals and Vegetables: They abound in Gold more than any of the *Spanish* Provinces, and have discovered so many Diamonds in some of the Western Provinces of late Years, that it has sunk the Value of Diamonds in *Europe*; they abound also in Emeralds, and other Precious Stones.

REVOLUTIONS.

BRASIL was first discovered by *Americus Vespucius*, then in the Service of *Spain*, in 1498; but he sailed then no farther than the 5th Degree of South Latitude, being employed, in 1500, by the King of *Portugal*, he extended his Discoveries to 52 Degrees. And the same Year, *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*, sending a Fleet of thirteen Sail to the *East-Indies*, they were driven from their intended

BRASIL. tended Course upon the Coast of *Brasil*; where meeting with a pretty good Harbour after a Storm, wherein they had suffered much, they gave it the Name of *Porto Seguro*, which lies in 17 Degrees of South Latitude, and to the Country they gave the Name of *Santa Cruz*, though it soon after lost it, and obtained the Name of *Brasil*, as has been observed already.

THE Admiral of this Fleet, *Peter Alvarez Capralis*, sent one of his Ships back to *Portugal*, with an Account of the Richness of the Country, and its agreeable Situation; and then continued his Voyage to the *East-Indies* with the rest.

SEVERAL private Adventurers, upon this Intelligence, went over to *Brasil* with their Families; but were most of them destroyed by the Natives, and no Settlement was made to any Purpose, till the Year 1549, when *John III.* King of *Portugal*, sent a great Fleet there with 1000 Soldiers on Board, under the Command of *Thomas de Sosa* their General; and with them, a great many Jesuits, whom Pope *Paul III.* desired might be embarked in order to endeavour the Conversion of the Natives.

THIS Fleet arriving at the Bay of *All Saints*, General *Sosa* there built the City of *St. Salvador*, of which, *Ferdinandez Sardinia* was appointed the first Bishop in the following Year 1550.

THE *Portuguese*, finding the *Brasilians* divided into several petty Kingdoms and States, at War among themselves, and joining with one Nation against another; by this Means subdued first their Enemies, and then their Allies, making Slaves of all without Distinction.

SERIGIPPE which lies contiguous to the Bay of *All Saints* on the North, and which I have considered as Part of this Province, was the first Conquest the *Portuguese* made. The *French* also made several Attempts to settle Colonies on the Coast of *Brasil*, but were driven from thence, from Time to Time, by the *Portuguese*; who at length possessed themselves of all the Coast, from the River *Amazon* to the River of *Plata*.

2

To justify their Invasions of this Country, and the barbarous Massacres they committed there, they have represented the People as Infidels, without any Nation of God or Religion, and even Cannibals: And whereas we have been told by the *Spaniards*, that the Countries of *Guiana*, and *Caribbiana*, which lie contiguous to *Brasil*, and extend from the Equator to 10 Degrees North Latitude, were Cannibals; now the *Portuguese* endeavour to persuade us, that the *Brasilians*, whose Country extends from the Equator to 35 Degrees of South Latitude, were likewise Cannibals and Infidels: And, indeed, this is what the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* have affirmed of all the *American* Nations at one Time or other. They tell us, they were perpetually engaged in War with each other, and eat up their Enemies that fell into their Hands; and yet none of our *English* Adventurers for 100 Years past, none of our Buccaneers, that have penetrated through and through the Country, and resided among the *Caribbees* themselves, who were most famed for eating Human Flesh, have ever seen any such Thing.

ABOUT 140 Years ago, indeed, some of our People, who had their Intelligence, I presume, from the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, pretended that they had seen the *Brasilians* devour their Enemies, of whom the most eminent is *Knivet*. This Gentleman tells us, he was left sick on Shore at *Brasil*, by Captain *Cavendish*, in the Year 1592, and being taken Prisoner by the Natives, together with twelve *Portuguese*, his Companions were killed, broiled, and eaten; but his life was saved, because the Natives took him for a *Frenchman*, and of these Executions he gives us the following Account.

THAT having taken a Prisoner in Battle, and conveyed him to their own Country, they give him one of their Sisters, or Daughters, to serve him as a temporary Wife, furnishing him with the best Food, and all that is desirable in Life: And when they had fattened him, they proclaimed the Day and Place of Execution, in the Morning whereof many Thousands of the People assembled early, drinking, singing and

BRASIL. and dancing for several Hours; after which the Captive was brought out, bound about the Body with Cords, which were held by six or seven People, but his Hands at liberty. In this Condition the Prisoner usually makes a Speech to the People, and tells them, Thus have I often bound your Friends and Relations, and then broiled and devoured them; nor will my Countrymen suffer my Death to be long unrevenged. Then they bring him Stones, and bid him revenge himself, whereupon he throws them among the Multitude, of whom he frequently wounds several; and having continued this Sport some Time, one advances with the fatal Club, and demanding, Art thou he that hast killed and devoured our People? Take Leave of all that is pleasant and desirable to thee, for thou shalt see them no more, thou shalt be killed and devoured in like Manner, as thou hast killed and devoured our Friends; and then beats out his Brains with the Club. After which the Wife they had given him, comes and bewails the Fate of her Husband, but eats the first Slice of him, however, when he is broiled, it is said; and then the rest of the Carcase is cut in Pieces, and distributed among the People: Particularly they give the Guts and Entrails to the Women, and the Head and Brains fall to the Share of the Children. *Purchase*, Vol. iv. p. 1217. Vol. v. p. 914.

IF any Man should be found credulous enough to believe this formal and improbable Tale, yet the rest of the monstrous Relations contained in Mr. *Knivet's* Narrative, which are now known to be false, are sufficient to shock his Faith in this.

HE relates, That the People of *Tucuman*, a Province of *La Plata*, are Pigmies. *Purchase*, Vol. iv. p. 1231. And that at the Streights of *Magellan*, he met with another Nation of Pigmies, of about five Spans high, and with Mouths from Ear to Ear, of whom he saw several Thousands; and that they trafficked with the *English*, giving them Pearls and Feathers for *European* Toys.

THAT, in the same Streights, he saw naked Giants sixteen Spans high. *Purchase*, Vol. iv. p. 1231.

VOL. II. N° CIX.

THAT he saw a Monster of a Mer-**BRASIL.** maid, p. 1240.

THAT he had seen a Snake that swallowed Men, Stags, and Oxen; and after such Morfels, would lie sleeping, till his Flesh rotted, or was picked clean off the Bones, by Birds of Prey; after which new Flesh grew upon the Bones again, and the Creature awaked, his Head having been alive all the while, but buried in Mud. *Purchase*, Vol. v. p. 914.

THAT he knew several *Brasilians* possessed by the Devil, and some of them killed by Evil Spirits. He himself heard an *Indian* discoursing with an Evil Spirit, and threatening to turn Christian if the Spirit did not cease to afflict him. May we not, after such a Multitude of idle Stories, very well suspend our Belief of the first in Relation to Cannibals? And yet this is the Man, whose Account of these Things is most depended upon, and which *Purchase*, in his Collection, has given such Countenance to, that he has compiled his Narratives twice over, viz. in the fourth and fifth Volumes, from whence I took these pretty Stories. But it being acknowledged, that the *Caribbees*, and other Nations, charged with eating Human Flesh, have generally left it off at this Day; and the Reason of their present Abstemiousness being demanded, one of Mr. *Purchase's* Authors informs us, that they happened to eat a Friar, whose Flesh poisoned several of them, and that was the Reason they never liked Man's Flesh since. *Purchase*, Vol. iii. p. 865.

As to Religion, the *Portuguese* will not allow the *Brasilians* any, and yet they tell us they have Priests, and allow a State of Rewards and Punishments; that the Brave go to Elysium, or Paradise, and mean and cowardly Souls to a Place of Torment. *Purchase*, Vol. v. p. 915, &c.

THE same Authors admit, that their Priests direct them to bring their Offerings to them, and assure them, on their doing this, that those invisible Beings, who give them Food, and all the good Things they enjoy, will prosper their Affairs: And if they neglect this, they must expect some dreadful Calamities will overtake them; and that, accordingly, the People bring

8 F

them

BRASIL. them such Fruits as they apprehend will be most acceptable. They inform us also, that they believe their Souls survive their Bodies, and are converted into Dæmons, or Spirits, after Death. *Purchase*, Vol. iv. p. 1289. Vol. v. p. 917.

ANOTHER Writer, in *Purchase's* Collection, tells us, they comforted themselves that they should, after Death, visit their Ancestors beyond certain Mountains. From all which it is evident, that this People were not entirely without Religion; that they believed some invisible Beings are the Authors of all their good and bad Fortune in the World, and that they shall be rewarded and punished hereafter, according to their Behaviour in this Life, and consequently are not those Infidels they are sometimes represented.

AND though the idolatrous *Portuguese* make their having no Images amongst them another Argument, that they had no Religion, I presume that will be of little Weight with Protestants. But further, we meet with Writers in *Purchase*, that tell us, some of the *Brazilians* worship the New Moon, at least, that they dance and sing when it appears: And that others worship the Constellation, called the Great Bear, rejoicing much when it appears in their Hemisphere.

As to their having no Temples, perhaps they look upon the Heaven over their Heads to be the only proper Temple to adore the great Creator in, or, at least, most proper to adore the Sun, Moon, and Stars, if they worship them as Gods, as some relate.

NOR do these People live without Government; they have Kings in their respective Territories, who administer Justice according to the Custom of their several Countries, though they have no written Laws: And where one Man has injured another, he is obliged to make him Satisfaction in Kind, if it be possible; and no People are more kind or hospitable to Strangers, than the *Brazilians* are; so far are they from murdering and devouring Foreigners, even by the Relation of those very *Portuguese*, that have represented them as Cannibals.

IN their Marriages they are not confined to one Woman, but enter into a Contract, however, with their Relations to use them well, in which they are usually as good as their Words; and when a Man takes home his Wife, there is great Feasting and Rejoicing, but no other Ceremony that I can learn.

THE Women, however, seem to have much the greatest Share in the Care and Trouble of providing for the Family; for they are not only employed in their Domestick Affairs, but it falls to their Lot to plant and gather in their Fruits, Roots, and other Food. The Man is only employed in making his Arms, or in Hunting or Fishing; and upon a March, or Removal, the Women carry all the Baggage.

THEY tell us a great many idle Stories, in Relation to their Women's bearing Children, and particularly, that the Woman is no sooner delivered, but she goes about her Business, and the Husband is put to Bed in her Stead, and the Child is left to shift for itself upon the Floor. And yet, in other Places, they tell us, that no People are so fond of their Children as the *Brazilians*; and indeed the Relations that *Purchase* has compiled, are so inconsistent, and full of Contradictions, that we scarce know what to make of them.

THE best Account I can collect of their Funerals and Mourning is, that upon the Death of any Person, the Friends and Relations assemble, and set up an Howl, not unlike that of the Wild *Irish*, repeating, by Turns, the Praises of the Deceased, admiring his Wealth, his Strength, Beauty, and excellent Parts, the Multitude of his Friends, Servants and Cattle, concluding with Words of the following Tenure: "He is dead, we shall see him no more until we dance with him beyond the Mountains." These Lamentations having continued six Hours, they prepare to bury the Deceased, digging a Grave like the Mouth of a Well, in which they place the Corpse in a sitting Posture; and building a little Tomb, in the Form of a Dome over him, they leave, at the Place, all Manner of Meat and Drink, his Arms, and whatever was useful to him while alive; coming every

BRASIL. every Day with fresh Supplies to the Grave for a Month, making the same Lamentations they did the first Day, and afflicting themselves, during this Time, by fasting and other Penances; and if he leave Wives behind him, they cut off their Hair. This Mourning having continued a Month, they resume their former Way of Life. The Master of the Family is usually buried in the Middle of the House, and his Tomb adorned with beautiful Feathers, and other Ornaments.

As to the Wars of these People among themselves, they had no Arms, but Bows, Arrows, and Wooden Swords, or Clubs, and in some Places Shields; and when they Charged an Enemy, it was never in Rank and File, but in great Confusion, if they came to a Field Fight, which was not often, for most of their Actions were performed by Surprise. They would march Day and Night with great Expedition, and lying in Woods, fell upon their Enemies when they were unprepared to receive them, carrying every Man, Women and Children, into Slavery; for their Towns had no Walls or Fortifications to defend them.

To proceed in the History, I have already observed, that the *Portuguese* discovered this Country in the Year 1500, that they made several Attempts to Plant it, with small Success, till the Year 1549, when they fixed themselves at the Bay of *All Saints*, and built the City of *Salvador*. That the *French* also made some Attempts to plant Colonies on this Coast, but were driven from thence by the *Portuguese*, who remained in *Brasil* almost without a Rival, till the Year 1623; but being then under the Dominion of the King of *Spain*, with whom the *United Provinces* were at War, the *Dutch West-India Company* fitted out a strong Fleet, and putting a good Body of Land Forces on Board, sent them to *Brasil*, where they attacked and took the City of *St. Salvador*, in the Bay of *All Saints*, with very little Loss. But the King of *Spain*, sending a great Fleet and Army thither in the Year 1625, recovered the City again, and drove the *Dutch* out of the Country. However, the *Hollanders*

continued to send strong Squadrons to the **BRASIL** Coast of *Brasil* every Year, where they harrassed the *Portuguese* Settlements, and made Abundance of rich Prizes; and making a Descent near *Olinda*, in the Year 1629, took that City, with the Fortrefs of the *Receif*, and being joined by some Nations of the *Indians* against the *Portuguese*, at length possessed themselves of the entire Province of *Pernambuco*, where they erected a great many Forts, and compelled the *Portuguese*, who resided in that Part of the Country, to obey them as their Sovereigns; whereupon Count *Maurice* of *Nassau* was pleased to accept the Government of the *Dutch Territories* in *Brasil*, and remained in that Capacity, at the *Receif*, or *Pernambuco*, from the Year 1637, to the Year 1644; during all which Time the *Dutch* and *Portuguese* remaining in a State of War, Prince *Maurice* recovered from the *Portuguese*, three more of their Northern Provinces: Nor did he content himself with taking Places from the *Portuguese* in *Brasil*, but detached from thence a Squadron to the Coast of *Africa*, and took from them the important Fort of *Del Mina*, the strongest Fortrefs on the *Guinea* Coast, which the *Hollanders* are in Possession of to this Day. But the *Dutch West-India Company*, not supplying the Count with such a Number of Forces as he apprehended was necessary to secure their Conquests against the *Portuguese*, he returned to *Holland* in Disgust, in the Year 1644, after which the Affairs of the *Dutch* in *Brasil* declined apace; for the *Portuguese*, who lived under the Government of the *Hollanders*, joining their Countrymen, by Degrees recovered all the Towns which the *Hollanders* were in Possession of, and drove them entirely out of *Brasil* again in the Year 1654.

HOWEVER the *Dutch* still continuing their Pretensions to *Brasil*, and committing continual Depredations on the *Portuguese* at Sea, the latter agreed, at a Treaty of Peace made between the King of *Portugal* and the States-General, by the Mediation of *England*, in the Year 1661, to pay the *Dutch*, eighty Tons of Gold, to relinquish their Interest in that Country; which was accepted,

BRASIL. accepted, and the *Portuguese* have remained in the peaceable Possession of all *Brasil*, from that Day to this.

I COME now to consider the present Inhabitants of *Brasil*, which are, 1. *Portuguese*. 2. *Crioli*. 3. *Mestise*. 4. *Negroes*; and, 5. *Brasilians*. The *Portuguese* of *Europe*, who are the Governors, are the fewest in Number; the *Crioli*, or those born of *Portuguese* Parents in *Brasil*, are more numerous; and the *Mestise*, or mingled Breed, still more numerous than either; for few of the *Portuguese*, but have had black or tawny Mistresses, and the Issue of these having intermarried, they have multiplied to a very great Degree. But whether the *Negroes* do not exceed all the rest, I much question; there having been so many imported annually from *Africa* for 150 Years past. The *Dutch* relate, that when they were possessed of the Northern Provinces of *Brasil*, which are not a Third of the Whole, they employed no less than 40,000 *Negroes* in their Sugar Works, and other Husbandry: And as the *Portuguese* employed a proportionable Number, which have been increasing, and multiplying for upwards of 100 Years, and so many Thousands annually imported all the while, they must of Necessity swarm upon the *Brasil* Coast by this Time; and indeed there are some *Portuguese* Planters, it is said, that have several Hundreds of *Negro* Slaves; and when they have not Employment for them, they suffer them to work for themselves, paying their Masters something weekly out of what they get: And so *Negroes* which are bred up to any Trade, such as Carpenters, Smiths, and Bricklayers, bring in their Masters a handsome Income.

As to the Native *Brasilians*, they are partly Freemen and partly Slaves; but the *Negro* Slaves are much more valued than the *Brasilians*, being of more robust Constitutions, and fitter for Labour: As they come from the Coast of *Africa*, opposite to *Brasil*, which is much hotter, they endure Fatigue in the Hot Seasons, better than the Natives. Nor are the latter now very numerous; for the *Portuguese*, on their Invasion of this Country, like the *Spaniards*,

BRASIL. in their Conquests, destroyed the unfortunate Natives, by all the cruel Ways they could invent; in so much that of 100,000 Men, they found in the small Province of *Serigippe* (if we may credit the *Dutch* Writers) they reduced them in few Years to 400 or 500 Men.

As to the Forces and Strength of the *Portuguese* in *Brasil*, I do not at all doubt, but that is sufficient at this Day, to maintain the Dominion of that Country against any other Power. The *English* and *Dutch*, and other Powers, may disturb their Navigation, and perhaps now and then surprise their Maritime Places; but I do not apprehend they would any of them be able to take this Country from them, if they should attempt it, for that Mixture of People, *Portuguese*, *Crioli*, Natives, *Mestise* and *Negroes*, are now in a Manner one People, their Religion the same, and their Blood intermixed by Marriages, and would infallibly unite therefore against all the rest of the World, however they may disagree among themselves, while they have no Enemy to contend with. And this is an Advantage, that the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese* and *French*, have of the *English*, in *America*; these Nations always make the Natives and *Negroes*, where they have any Power, of their own Religion, and these in a little Time discover as much or more Zeal for their Superstition, than the *Spaniards* themselves, and would never bear that any People, who carried the Name of Hereticks should plant themselves amongst them, if they had no other Reason to oppose it.

NOR is the Circumstance of Marriage and Alliance inconsiderable; Blood and Relation lays strong Obligations upon all People to unite against Strangers, and this the *English* do not enough consider, when they prohibit their People matching with the Natives or *Negroes*; and we seem as averse to the Instructing them in our Religion, as we do to the mingling our Blood with theirs; which is the Reason they generally remain in a separate Interest, and instead of serving their Allies, or Masters, faithfully, are ever conspiring to cut their Throats, and escape out of their Hands, and



North
America



BRASIL and possibly would rather join an Enemy than oppose him.

BUT to proceed: Any *European* Power would find much greater Difficulties, in driving the *Portuguese* from their Settlements in *Brasil*, than they did to fix themselves there; for the Inhabitants were then a naked defenceless People, and divided into a great many little States and Kingdoms; whereas the present Inhabitants are all united, and understand the Art of War as well as we do. They are also used to that hot Climate, which must prove fatal to Abundance of *Europeans* on their Arrival there,

as well as the Want of Provisions, which **BRASIL** the *Portuguese* would not fail to destroy, in order to distress their Enemies. From all which Considerations I conclude, that the *Portuguese* are now so well fixed in *Brasil*, that it is not in the Power of any other Nation to expel them from this Country, and fix themselves in it.

IF the *Dutch*, who had possessed themselves of four of their Provinces, and had so many Fortresses in *Brasil*, could not maintain their Ground, it is reasonable to believe, that no other Power will be able to succeed in such an Enterprize.



BRITISH AMERICA.

BRITISH AMERICA.
Divisions.

BRITISH America may be divided into three Parts. 1. Those Provinces which lie contiguous on the Eastern Coast of *America*, extending from 30 Degrees to 50 Degrees North Latitude, which lying in an oblique Direction, are upwards of 1500 Miles in Length; and how far they may in Time extend to the West, is uncertain; for as our People increase, their Plantations will increase, and extend farther West. Their Patents, or Charters, authorizing them to plant that Country, as far as the *Pacifick* Ocean, or *South-Sea*, viz. That great Ocean that divides *America* from *China*, and the *East-Indies*, being upwards of 10,000 Miles over, and very improperly called the *South-Sea*, as it extends from the *Arctic*, to the *Antarctic* Pole; for that Part of this Ocean only, which is South of *America*, is properly the *South-Sea*; but the *Spaniards*, on the Discovery of *America*, passing the *Isthmus* of *Darien*, from North to South, gave that Sea, on the North of the *Isthmus*, the Name of the *North-Sea*, and that on the South of the *Isthmus*, the Name of the *South-Sea*, though great Part of that Sea is in reality in North Latitude. To avoid Confusion, therefore, I shall call all that great Sea West

of *America*, the *Pacifick* Ocean, by which **BRITISH AMERICA** Part of it has been called almost ever since the first Discovery of it.

THE *British* Provinces comprehended First Division. in this first Division, proceeding from the South-West, to the North-East, are, 1. *Georgia*. 2. *South Carolina*. 3. *North Carolina*. 4. *Virginia*. 5. *Maryland*. 6. *Pennsylvania*. 7. *West Jersey*. 8. *East Jersey*. 9. *New York*. 10. *New England*, subdivided into the Provinces of *Massachusetts*, *Connecticut*, *Rhode Island*, and *New Hampshire*, or *Piscataway*; and, 11. *Nova Scotia*, or *New Scotland*.

2. THE second Division of the *British* Plantations, may be denominated *British* Canada, comprehending *New Britain* or *Esquimaux*, and *Terra de Labrador*, with all the Lands round *Hudson's Bay*, and as much farther North and West as our People can plant them.

3. THE third Division of the *British* Dominions in *America*, is composed of the Islands, viz. 1. *Providence* and the *Bahama Islands*. 2. *Jamaica*. 3. *Anguilla*. 4. *St. Christopher's*. 5. *Nevis*. 6. *Barbuda*. 7. *Bermudas*. 8. *Antego*. 9. *Montserrat*. 10. *Dominica*. 11. *St. Lucia*. 12. *St. Vincent*. 13. *Barbadoes*. 14. *Tobago*. 15. *Newfoundland*.

VIRGINIA. *foundland*, and the Islands near that Coast; and, 16. The Islands in the Bay of *Fundy*, and on the South-West Coast of *Nova-Scotia*, and particularly *Canso*.

First English Colonies sent thither.

Virginia.

Situation.

Face of the Country.

Bay of Chesapeake Rivers.

THE first *British* Adventurer, who attempted, to plant Colonies on the East Coast of *North America*, was *Sir Walter Raleigh*, who gave it the Name of *Virginia*, in Honour to his Sovereign, the *Virgin-Queen Elizabeth*. It was afterwards known by the Name of *North* and *South Virginia*, and at present is divided into the several Provinces contained in the first Division of the *British* Dominions abovementioned.

As the Country to which the Name of *Virginia* is now appropriated, was first planted, I shall begin with the Description of that Province.

THE Modern *Virginia* extends from the Sea-Coast to the Westward, as far as the *English* can extend their Plantations, even beyond the *Apalachian* Mountains and the River *Ohio*, and lies between 36 and 39 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, being about 240 Miles in Length, the Breadth uncertain; bounded by *Potomack* River, which divides it from *Maryland*, on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by *Carolina* on the South, and by unknown Lands on the West. The Coast contiguous to the Ocean, is a level Country, but rises into Hills 60 or 70 Miles to the Westward of the Coast. The Uplands were antiently Forests, and most Part of the Lowlands Bogs and Morasses, which the Planters call Swamps. Their Forests consist of lofty Trees of a great Bulk, with very little Underwood intermixed with them, so that a Horseman may gallop through them without Difficulty; and their Shade defends the Traveller from the scorching Sun in Summer. The Lowlands are encumbered with Bushes and Underwood.

THE Bay of *Chesapeake* is one of the finest Bays in *America*, which is entered between *Cape Charles* and *Cape Henry*, and running near 200 Miles North within Land, divides *Virginia* into two Parts, into which fall four large navigable Rivers,

which rising in the Western Hills, run East, and are so deep that Shipping may go up to the Planters Doors. The Names of these Rivers are, *James River*, *York River*, *Rappahannock River*, and *Potomack River*, all which run from East to West, and discharge themselves into the Bay of *Chesapeake*.

THE River *Ohio*, called *le belle Riviere*, *Ohio River*, in the *French* Maps, rises in *Pennsylvania*, a little East of the Lake *Erie*, in 42 Degrees of North Latitude, and 80 Degrees of West Longitude, and running to the South-West through *Virginia*, discharges itself into the great great River *Mississippi*, receiving in its Passage the River *Ouback* on the North, and the River *Cherekis* on the South, with several other lesser Streams.

THE River *Ouback*, which lies North-West of the *Ohio*, has been hitherto esteemed Part of the *British* Dominions; but as the *French* have denominated *Canada*, and, indeed, all the *British* Dominions on the Continent of *North-America*, *New France* in their Maps, they now proceed to make good their Claim, by building Forts on the River *Ohio*, imprisoning and murdering our People, dwelling or travelling on the Frontiers of *Virginia*, and pretend, they have a Right to do it; and the like Outrages we must soon expect on the Frontiers of all our *American* Plantations, if we indolently suffer them to proceed with impunity, and do not drive them from our Frontiers, while it is in our Power. We are superior to them in that Part of the World at present, and are able to wrest all *Canada* and *Florida* from them, as well as *Nova Scotia*: But if we suffer them to build Forts on our Frontiers, it may be difficult hereafter to compel them to do us Justice: They will soon cut off our Communication, and consequently all our Traffick with the *Indians*, with whom we yet barter the *British* Manufactures for their rich Furs and other Produce.

THE following Speech of the Deputy-Governor of *Virginia*, on the 14th of February, 1754, to the Council and Representatives of that Province, abundantly manifests

Encroachments and Outrages committed by the French on the British Frontiers.

The Deputy-Governor's Speech thereupon.

VIRGINIA. manifests the ambitious Views of the encroaching *French*; a Part whereof follows, *viz.*

Gentlemen of the Council, Mr. Speaker, and Gentlemen of the House of Burgesses.

NOTHING less than a very important Concern could have induced me to call you together again after so short a Recess, but the Dignity of the Crown of *Great-Britain*, the Welfare of all the Colonies on this Continent, and more especially of this Dominion, engaged me to have your Advice and Assistance in an Affair of the greatest Consequence.

MAJOR *Washington*, who was sent by me to the Commandant of the *French* Forces on the River *Ohio*, being returned, informs me, he found that Officer at a Fort they had erected on a Creek running into the *Ohio*, and that they were then preparing all Necessaries for building another Fort on that River; that they had 220 Canoes made, and many more rough-hewed to be made, in order to transport, early this Spring, a great Number of Regular Forces, not less than 1500 Men, with their *Indians* in Friendship with them, down the River *Ohio*, in order to build many more Fortresses on it; and they proposed *Loggs Town* to be the chief Place of their Rendezvous.

MAJOR *Washington* further reports, that he asked, why they had seized the Goods of our Traders, and sent their Persons Prisoners to *Canada*? To which the Commandant answered, that his Orders from their General, the Governor of *Canada*, were, not to permit any *English* Subjects to trade on the Waters of the *Ohio*, but to seize their Goods, and send them Prisoners to *Quebeck*. He also asked the Reason of taking Mr. *Frazier's* House from him, which he had built and lived in upwards of twelve Years. He said that Man was lucky that he made his Escape, or he would have sent him Prisoner to *Canada*.

THESE Transactions are entirely inconsistent with the Treaties subsisting between the two Crowns, and contrary to my Instructions from his Majesty, whereby I am directed to prevent any Foreign Power,

settling or building any Fortresses on his VIRGINIA. Majesty's Lands.

AND to the forementioned unjustifiable Insults of the *French*, the cruel and barbarous Murder in cool Blood, of a whole Family in his Dominion, Man, Wife, and five Children, no longer ago than last Month, and very lately a poor Man on the South Branch of *Patowmack*, robbed of his Son. These Depredations were said to be done by the *French Indians*, but if I be rightly informed, some of the *French* Subjects always go with the *Indians* on these Incursions, and are both privy to, and Instigators of their Robberies and Murders.

THE North and North-West Winds are Air, Winds, and Seasons. very nitrous, and piercing-cold and clear, or else stormy; the South-East and South hazy and sultry hot; in Winter they have a fine clear Air, and dry, which renders it very pleasant; their Frosts are short, but sometimes so very sharp, that it will freeze the Rivers over three Miles broad.

SNOW falls sometimes in pretty great Quantities, but rarely continues there above a Day or two; their Spring is about a Month earlier than in *England*; in *April* they have frequent Rains; *May* and *June* the Heat increases, and is much like our Summer, being mitigated with gentle Breezes, that rise about Nine of the Clock, and decrease and increase, as the Sun rises and falls. In *July* and *August*, those Breezes cease, and the Air becomes stagnant; then the Heat is violent and troublesome; in *September*, the Weather usually breaks suddenly, and there falls very considerable Rains, when many fall sick, this being the Time for Cachexies, Fluxes, scorbutical Dropsies and Gripes.

VIRGINIA is divided into the following Counties, *viz.* 1. *Richmond*. 2. *Stafford*. 3. *Westmoreland*. 4. *Rappabannock* County. 5. *Essex*. 6. *Northumberland*. 7. *Lancashire*; and, 8. *Middlesex*, which lie upon, or between the Rivers *Patomack* and *Rapabannock*. 9. *King William's* County. 10. *New Kent*. 11. *Gloucester*. 12. *Prince George* County. 13. *King and Queen* County. 14. *Charles* County. 15. *James* County. 16. *York* County. 17. *Warwick* County.

VIRGINIA. ty. 18. *Elizabeth County*. 19. *Henrico County*. 20. *Surrey*. 21. *Isle of Wight County*. 22. *Nansamund County*. 23. *Princess Anne County*; and, 24. *Norfolk County*, which lie upon or near *York* and *James Rivers*. 25. *Acomack*; and, 26. *Norhampton Counties*, which lie between the *Bay of Chesapeak* and the Ocean.

THESE Counties, it is computed, contain upwards of 100,000 White People, besides Servants and Negroes, who are near three Times as many.

Towns.

THE only two Towns in *Virginia*, built by the *English*, are, *James Town* and *Williamsburgh*.

James Town.

1. *JAMES TOWN*, before the Building of *Williamsburgh*, esteemed the Capital, is situate on a Peninsula formed by *James River*, about forty Miles from the Mouth of it, in 76 Degrees odd Minutes West Longitude, and 37 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, in which there may be fourscore or an hundred Houses, chiefly for the Entertainment of Sea-faring People. It is strongly situated naturally; but the Fortifications much neglected, as the Inhabitants look upon themselves to be secure from Enemies so far up the River; and, indeed, there is no Instance of their having been attacked by an Enemy in all the late Wars, and very seldom any Privateers have ventured to come within the Capes of *Virginia*.

Williamsburgh.

2. *WILLIAMSBURGH*, now the Capital of *Virginia*, is situate seven Miles from *James Town* between *James River* and *York River*; and notwithstanding this is the Seat of the Government, where the General Assembly or Parliament meet, it scarce contains fifty Houses: For the *Virginian* Planters chuse to live upon their Estates and Plantations, and not in Towns, though great Pains have been taken to induce them to build and inhabit Towns. Governor *Nicholson* did all that lay in his Power to enlarge this Place, in order to draw some of the most substantial Inhabitants hither: He built them a Town-House, and a fine College was erected for the Education of the *Indians*, and he erected some Works for its Defence, but all to little Purpose,

they still retain the Humour of living dispersed at their Farms about the Country.

It has been already observed, in treating of *Spanish America*, that there were neither Horses, Cows, Sheep, Hogs, or Camels in any Part of *America*, before the *Europeans* carried them thither; but they are now exceedingly multiplied, many of them run wild.

THERE were in *America*, originally, Elks, Red, and Fallow Deer, Racoons, that have some Resemblance of a Badger: The Opossum much of the same Size. The Skin of the Female's Belly large, and so folded, as to draw up like a Purse, where she secures her young Brood when she apprehends Danger.

OF Squirrels there are two Sorts, one larger than a Fox, and grey, which are good Food. The other is the Flying Squirrel less than the *English*; the Skin on each Side his Belly so large, that it assists him in skipping from one Tree to another; and this is called Flying. The Musk-Rat is another Animal like a Water-Rat, that smells strong of Musk. Mr. *Clayton*, an intelligent Planter, seems to be of Opinion, that there are no Lions in the Country, and few Bears, but several Sorts of Wild Cats and Wolves, which devour their Sheep. There are also Beavers here, but much more plentiful in the Extremity of the North. Here are both Sea and Land-Tortoises. Their Frogs are ten Times as big as those in *England*; Lizards are common, which are the Food of Snakes as well as Men.

THE Rattle-Snake is so called because of the Rattles in his Tail, which are so loud, that they give the Traveller Notice of his Danger: The Creature shakes them whenever he is disturbed by Way of Threat. Mr. *Clayton* says, he killed several of them; that young Snakes have no Rattle before they are a Year old. The Rattle, which is a small Skin or Bladder, with something in it very hard, occasions the Noise, and he has seen some with eleven or twelve Rattles divided by Joints. It is supposed, that this Species of Snakes have as many Rattles, as they are Years old;

Animals.
Quadrupedes.

Serpents.

VIRGINIA. old; his Bite is generally mortal, but most dangerous in hot Weather, when he is in full Vigour. We have had these Animals brought over to *England* alive, I saw some of them at the *Virginia* Coffee-House, behind the *Royal-Exchange*, they were kept up two Pair of Stairs; and yet we heard their Rattles at the Bottom of the Stairs, they had then lived upwards of half a Year without Meat, and yet struck at us with great Force, and the Wires of their Cage only prevented their doing Execution on the Company.

SIR *Hans Sloane* mentions it as a common Opinion in *Virginia*, that these Rattle-Snakes can charm other Animals, by their earnestly looking at them, so that their Prey shall run into their Mouths; but says Sir *Hans*, in my Opinion, the whole Mystery of their enchanting or charming any Creature is chiefly this: When such Animals as are their proper Prey, namely small Quadrupeds, or Birds, are surprised by them, the Snake bites them, and the Poison allows the Creature Time to fly up to a Tree, or run a little Way before they fall. When they are perfectly dead, the Snake wriggles after the wounded Animals, licks them over with his Spawl or Spittle, and swallows them; several People, says Colonel *Beverly*, in his History of *Virginia*, have seen Squirrels run down a Tree directly into a Snake's Mouth, and have seen Birds fluttering up and down, and chattering at these Snakes, till at last they have dropped down just before them.

SIR *Hans Sloane's* Opinion, that the Creature is first bitten, and gets away from the Snake, but does not fall, till the Poison begins to operate, seems to be a very just Solution of this Mystery of the Birds, and other Animals being charmed by the Eyes of the Snake.

GIVE me Leave to offer another Conjecture at the Reason of the Birds flying towards the Snake, namely, that a Bird may be taken with the Brightness of the Serpent's Eyes, as we see some Birds here are, with the Fowler's Glass, and fly to it when the Net is thrown over them, or as a Moth flies to the Flame of a Candle, till

she comes so near it, as to be burnt. **VIRGINIA.** There are several other Species of Snakes in *Virginia*, as the Black Snake, the Water Snake, the Corn Snake, the black Viper Snake, and the Copper-bellied Snake; the last three as venomous as the Rattle-Snake, and bring forth their Young alive; whereas the other harmless Snakes lay Eggs, which are hatched afterwards; and this is the Distinction usually made, those only are venomous, which are viviparous. There is likewise the Horn Snake, so called from a sharp Horn in his Tail, which wounds as dangerously as the Rattle-Snake's Tooth; but these Snakes that are so much to be dreaded, are not common; a Man may live twenty Years in the Country, and not see one of them at large, in the Fields or Woods.

THERE are three Sorts of Eagles in *Virginia*; the largest is called the Grey Eagle, the second is the Bald Eagle; for the Body and Part of the Neck, being of a dark Brown, the upper Part of the Neck and Head is covered with a white Sort of Down, which makes it look as if it was bald, whence it is so named.

THE third is the Black Eagle, resembling most the *English* Eagle. They build their Nest, generally at the Top of some old Tree, naked of Boughs, and near the River Side, and the People fell the Tree generally when they take the Young. They are frequently fitting on some tall Tree by the River Side, whence they may have a Prospect up and down the River, to observe the Fishing-Hawk; for when they see the Fishing-Hawk has struck a Fish, immediately they take Wing, and it is sometimes very pleasant to observe the Flight; for when the Fishing-Hawk perceives herself pursued, she will scream, and make a terrible Noise, till at length she lets fall the Fish to make her own Escape, which the Eagle frequently catches, before it reaches the Earth or Water. These Eagles kill young Lambs, Pigs, &c.

THERE are Wild Turkeys very large; they mention Turkeys that have been killed, which have weighed between fifty and sixty Pounds; but the largest that ever I saw, says my Author, weighed something

better

VIRGINIA. better than thirty-eight Pounds; they have very long Legs, and will run very swiftly.

Fish.

THERE is no Place abounds with Sea and River Fish more than *Virginia*. In *February*, *March*, *April*, and *May*, there are Shoals of Herrings come up into their very Brooks, some of the Size of ours, but for the most part much larger. There are also Plenty of Cod-Fish, and the Stingrafs is said to be peculiar to this Country, being so called, from having a Sting in its Tail; it is esteemed good Food. In their Rivers there are the Old-Wife, the Sheeps-Head, an excellent Fish, Trouts, Green-Fish, Sturgeons in great Plenty; Plaife, Flounders, Whitings, Carp, Pikes, Mulletts, and Perch: And for Shell-Fish, they have Oysters, Crabs, Cockles, and Shrimps: Of those that are not eaten, they have in their Seas, Whale and Dog-Fish.

THERE is also a Fish they call the Toad-Fish, from his swelling monstrously when he is taken out of the Water; and the Rock-Fish, some Species whereof are poisonous, and have been fatal to those that have eaten them; though others, which are not easy to be distinguished from the former, are very wholesome Food.

THE Skip-Jack, so named from his skipping out of the Water, is tolerably good Food: And the Tobacco-Pipe-Fish, so called from its being long and slender like a Tobacco-Pipe.

IN the Month of *June*, annually, there rise up in the Salts, vast Beds of Seedling-Worms, which enter the Ships, Sloops, or Boats, where-ever they find the Coat of Pitch, Tar, or Lime, worn off the Timber, and, by Degrees, eat the Plank into Cells, like those of an Honey-Comb. These Worms continue thus upon the Surface of the Water, from their Rise in *June*, until the first great Rains after the Middle of *July*; but after that, do no great Damage till the next Summer Season, and never penetrate farther than the Plank, or Timber they first fix upon.

THE Damage occasioned by these Worms, may be four several Ways avoided.

1. **BY** keeping the Coat (of Pitch, **VIRGINIA,** Lime and Tallow, or whatever else it is) whole upon the Bottom of the Ship, or Vessel; for these Worms never fasten or enter, but where Timber is naked.

2. **BY** anchoring the large Vessels in the Strength of the Tide, during the Worm Season, and haling the smaller on Shore; for in the Current of a strong Tide, the Worms cannot fasten.

3. **BY** burning and cleaning immediately after the Worm Season is over, for then they are but just stuck into the Plank, and have not buried themselves in it; so that the least Fire in the World destroys them entirely, and prevents all Damage that would otherwise ensue from them.

4. **BY** running up into the Freshes, with the Ship or Vessel, during the five or six Weeks that the Worm is thus above Water; for they never enter or do any Damage in fresh Water, or where it is not very salt.

THE Stature of the *Virginians* and *Europeans* is much the same; there are in some Provinces, Men as tall as the largest *Germans*, and in others, People as little as the *French*; but no Nations of Giants, or Pigmies, as some of the first Discoverers related. They are generally proportionable, well made, strong and active, and born tolerably white; but take a great deal of Pains to darken their Complexion, by anointing themselves, and lying in the Sun. They also paint their Faces, Breasts and Shoulders of various Colours, but generally red. Their Hair and Eyes are black, the Men cutting theirs in several Forms, and Persons of Condition have always a long Lock behind. The Women wear their Hair long, sometimes loose and flowing, and at others, twisted and adorned with Beads, Shells and Feathers. The Men suffer no Hair on their Chins, or any Part of their Bodies. Their Features are good, especially those of the Women, their Limbs clean and strait, and scarce ever any crooked or deformed Persons among them. Their Noblemen and Chiefs wear a Coronet adorned with Feathers, and sometimes a whole Fowl stuffed and dried on their Heads,

Persons and Habits.

VIRGINIA. Heads, their Ornaments being Earrings of Copper, Chains of Shells, Feathers, and Beads about their Necks, and Bracelets of the same about their Arms.

THEIR Cloathing is only a Piece of a Skin about their Waist, that reaches down to their Knees; and those of Condition have the Skin of a Deer, or some other Beast for a Mantle, and another Piece of Skin serves them for Shoes and Buskins.

Genius and Temper.

CAPTAIN *Philip Amidas*, and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, who sailed thither with the first Embarkations in 1584, relate, that they were feasted and caressed by the *Indians*, beyond their Expectations: That the politest People in *Europe* could not have used them better, or have entertained Strangers more hospitably. We found them, says one of the Captains, *gentle, loving and faithful, void of all Guile and Treachery*. Captain *Smith*, another of the first Adventurers, acknowledges that he was hospitably entertained, till the Natives found they came to dispossess them of their Country, and then, indeed, they stood upon their Defence, and practised such Stratagems as Enemies usually do; that they are a hardy Race, and will lie all Night abroad in the severest Winters when they are at War, or engaged in any considerable Enterprize that requires it.

Soil and Produce.

THE Soil, according to Colonel *Beverly*, one of their principal Planters, is of such Variety, according to the different Situations, that it seems suitable to every Kind of Plant, conducive to the Profit, or Pleasure of Mankind. Their Forest-Trees, are Oak, Poplar, Pines, Cedars, Cypress, and Trees that produce Sweet-Gums. They have also a Variety of Evergreens, the beauteous Holly, the Myrtle, and the Live Oak; which, for three Quarters of the Year, is continually dropping its Acorns, and at the same Time, budding and bearing others in their Stead. They have also Elm, Ash, and Walnut, which have no Boughs to a very great Height; Beach, Hazle, Elder, and Willow, Sassafras, and Sarsaparilla.

AMONG their Fruits, they have Grapes that grow spontaneously, and the *European* Grape, that comes to great Perfection;

Cherries of three Sorts, one of them growing in Bunches, like Grapes, Plumbs, a great Variety of Peaches, that grow vastly large, and so plentiful, that they sometimes feed their Hogs with them. There is no Place where Apples and Pears abound more, but the Soil does not seem to delight in Oranges and Lemons. The Fruit, called the Chinquamine, resembles a Chestnut; the Macoquez is much like an Apple; the Fig and the Muttacocks, a Kind of Strawberry: Quinces are so plentiful, that they make a great deal of Marmalade, and Liquor of them.

BUT their chief Plant is Tobacco, the Seeds whereof are first sown in Beds; where having remained a Month, the Plants are transplanted into little Hillocks, like those in our Hop Grounds, the first rainy Weather; and being grown a Foot high there, within the Space of another Month, they top them, and prune off all the bottom Leaves, leaving only seven or eight on the Stalks, that they may be the better fed; and these Leaves, in six Weeks Time, will be in their full Growth. The Planters prune off the Suckers, and clear them of the Horn-Worm twice a Week, which is called Worming and Suckering, and this Work lasts three Weeks or a Month; by which Time, the Leaf, from green, begins to turn brownish, and to spot and thicken, which is a Sign of its ripening. As fast as the Plants ripen, they cut them down, and leave them in the Field for half a Day, then heap them up, and let them lie and sweat a Night, and the next Day carry them to the Tobacco-House, where every Plant is hang'd up at a convenient Distance from each other, for about a Month or five Weeks; at the End of which Time, they strike or take them down in moist Weather, when the Leaf gives, or else it will crumble to Dust; after which, they are laid upon Sticks, and covered up close in the Tobacco-House for a Week or a Fortnight to sweat, and then opening the Bulk in a wet Day, the Servants strip them, and sort them, the Top Leaves being the best, and the Bottom, the worst Tobacco. The last Work is to pack it in Hogsheds, or bundle it up, which is also done in a wet Season;

VIRGINIA. Season; for in the curing Tobacco, wet Seasons are as necessary as dry to make the Leaf pliant.

HERE is a great Variety of spontaneous Flowers, they have an unknown Variety; the finest Crown Imperial in the World, the Cardinal Flower so much extolled for its Scarlet Colour, the Moccasin Flower, and a thousand others, not yet known to *English* Herbalists. Almost all the Year round their Fields and Valleys are beautified with Flowers of one kind or other, and their Woods are as fragrant as a Garden.

THERE is also found the fine Tulip-bearing Laurel-Tree, which has the pleasantest Smell in the World, and keeps blossoming and seeding several Months together.

A KITCHEN-GARDEN does not thrive better, or faster, in any Part of the World than there. They have all the culinary Plants, that grow in *England*, and in greater Perfection. Besides these, they have several Roots, Herbs, Vine-Fruits, and Sallad-Flowers, peculiar to *Virginia*, most of which will neither increase, nor grow to Perfection in *England*.

A GARDEN is soon made here, either for Fruits or Flowers; Tulips from the Seed flourish the second Year; all Sorts of Herbs come to great Perfection here, and have a more delicious Flavour than in *England*. All *English* Grain also thrives here, as well as in any part of the World, as Wheat, Barley, Oats, Rye, Peas, and Rice; Flax, Hemp, and Cotton also grows here; Silk-Grafs grows spontaneously. Here also are Trees, that bear Honey and Sugar, and all Sorts of Naval Stores might be produced in *Virginia*, as Pitch, Tar, Rosin, Turpentine, Plank, Masts, Yards, Sails, Cordage and Iron.

THEIR Grafs is long coarse Stuff, of which they seldom make Hay, but their Cattle brouse upon it, both Winter and Summer, having very little other Fodder, except the Leaves of the Maize, or *Indian* Corn.

Constitution
of the *Indian*
Govern-
ments.

THE Constitution of the *Indian* Governments is generally a limited Monarchy, and the Crown descends to the next

Brother, and not to the Son of the deceased Monarch, and if there be no Brothers, then to the Sisters successively, according to their Seniority. The King transacts nothing of Consequence, without consulting his Priests and Chiefs of the People; and though he be vested with the Civil Power, the General has the Command of the Army in Time of War, independent of him. The whole Territory belonging to one Tribe, being but one great Common, every Man has a Right to what he erects, possesses, or uses, whether Buildings, or Plantations, as long as he remains in that Part of the Country where they lie; but when he removes, any other Man may settle on the same Spot of Ground.

THESE People, on Festivals and Re-Diversions. joicing Days, sing and dance in a Ring, taking Hands, having so painted, and disguised themselves, that it is difficult to know any of them. One of the first Adventurers relates, that being invited to one of these Entertainments, they carried him to a Wood Side, and having seated him and his Company by a good Fire, thirty young Women sallied out of the Wood perfectly naked, except a Modesty-Bit, made of Green Leaves, their Bodies being painted red, white and Black, and all Manner of Colours; on their Heads every one had a Pair of Stags Horns, Bows and Arrows in their Hands, and Quivers at their Backs: They took Hands and sung and danced round the Strangers and the Fire; and having continued this Diversion for an Hour, they retired into the Wood, where they had provided a Feast of Fish, Flesh, Fowl and Fruits, to which the Strangers were invited, and entertained, with their Country Songs, while they were at Dinner.

TRAVELLERS entertain us with such Religion. different and contradictory Accounts of the Religion of the Natives, that it is difficult to know what we ought to believe concerning them. Mr. *White*, who was sent over a Governor of an intended Colony by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, relates, that they worshiped the Sun, that at Break of Day, all the Family, above twelve Years of Age, went to the Water Side, and bathing until the

VIRGINIA. the Sun arose, offered Tobacco to this Planet, as he called it; and that they did the same at Sun-Set. Captain *Smith* and Colonel *Beverly*, who resided long amongst them, assure us, they worshipped the Images of some inferior Deities, whose Anger they seemed to dread, on which Account, the Generality of our People denominate the Objects of their Devotion Devils; though at the same Time, it is allowed, they pray to these inferior Deities for Success in their Undertakings, and for Plenty of Food and other Necessaries of Life: that they seem to acknowledge one Supreme God, but do not adore him, believing him to be too far exalted above them, and too happy in himself to be concerned about the trifling Affairs of poor Mortals. They seem also to believe a Future State, and that after Death they shall be removed to their Friends, who have gone before them, to an Elysium, or Paradise, beyond the Western Mountains. Others allow them no Religion, or very faint Notions of these Things; but all agree, that they are exceeding superstitious, and seem to dread Evil Spirits; and that they have their Conjurers whom they consult on their undertaking any Enterprize. Others relate, that these pretended Conjurers, are both Priests and Physicians and what they cannot cure by their Medicines, they pretend to do by Witchcraft.

IN order to reconcile these different Accounts, we must suppose, that different Tribes may have different Notions and different Rites and Ceremonies, and some of the Relaters may have obtained better Information than others.

Constitution
of the Eng-
lish Govern-
ment in Vir-
ginia.

THE Constitution of the *English* Government here resembles that of its Mother Country: The Governor represents the King; the Council answers to the House of Peers; and, the Representatives, who are chosen by the Freemen of every County, are their House of Commons; and this is called a Royal Government. There are other Kinds of Government in some other Provinces, as a Proprietary Government, a Charter Government, and a mixed Government, which will be ex-

VOL. II. N° CX.

plained when the State of those Govern- VIRGINIA. ments are respectively treated of.

THERE are three publick Officers, besides the Governor, who have their Commissions immediately from his Majesty, viz. the Auditor of the Revenue; the Receiver-General; and the Secretary, in, whose Office is kept the publick Records, and all Deeds, and others Writings are proved.

THE Ecclesiastical Commissary receives his Authority from the Bishop of *London*.

THE Treasurer of the Province is appointed by the General Assembly, and receives the Money raised by the Acts of that Assembly.

THERE are no other Forces in *Virginia* Forces. but Militia, of which the Governor is Lieutenant-General by his Commission; and in each County he appoints the Colonel, Lieutenant-Colonel, and Major.

EVERY Freeman, that is, all that are not Servants, (from sixteen to sixty Years of Age) are listed in the Militia, and are mustered once a Year at a General Muster; and four Times a Year by Troops and Companies, in their respective Counties; and they are reckoned to be about 20,000 Men; the whole Inhabitants, Men, Women, and Children, amounting to upwards of 100,000; and Slaves and Servants to twice that Number.

THIS Colony hath enjoyed a long Peace. The *Indians* were, till very lately, in perfect Subjection to them, but are now attacking almost every *British* Colony, supported by the *French*, who do not scruple to declare, they design to usurp the Dominion of them.

THE publick Revenues are, 1. A Rent Revenues. reserved by the Crown, of all the Lands granted by Patent. 2. A Duty of two Shillings a Hogshead on all Tobacco exported. 3. A Duty of Sixpence a Head for every Passenger brought into the Country. 4. Fines and Forfeitures. 5. Duties on Foreign Liquors, and on Slaves and Servants imported. And, lastly, Money raised by Acts passed in the Assembly, besides the Duties laid upon Tobacco in the Countries that produce it. There are such heavy Duties on all that is exported to England,

VIRGINIA *England*, that they amount to 250,000 l. annually, of which the Planters complain with some Reason. They observe, that the *English* Merchants only are the Gainers by this Traffick; those that are at the Charge of planting and preparing it, get but a bare Subsistence, and many of them are deeply in Debt to our Merchants: For the Prime Cost, clear of Duties, does not amount to more than a Penny a Pound.

Religion of
the English.

THE established Religion here, is that of the Church of *England*: Every Parish has its Minister, who has a House and Glebe, and about the Value of 80 l. per Annum, paid him in Tobacco, which the Church-Wardens collect for him: But there are no Protestant Bishops; an Ecclesiastical Commissary, or Superintendant, is appointed by the Bishop of *London* in this Colony, as well as in others, who inspects the Behaviour of the Clergy; and though a full Liberty of Conscience is allowed to all Persuasions, there are but few Dissenters from the established Church.

University.

THE Seat of the Government being removed from *James Town* to a Place called *Williamsburgh*, in Honour of King *William*, situate between *James* and *York River*, it was proposed to build a College there, to which their Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, in the Year 1692, gave about 2000 l. endowing it with 20,000 Acres of Land, and the Revenue of one Penny in the Pound on all Tobacco exported.

A POWER was also given to certain Gentlemen and their Successors, to build a College, and give it the Name of *William and Mary College*, in which there was appointed a President, six Professors, and 100 Students; the Trustees were enabled to take Estates to the Value of 2000 l. per Annum; and there has been a very large Donation by the Honourable Mr. *Boyle* to this College for the Education of *Indian* Children therein.

Poor.

NOTWITHSTANDING there are not many Planters very rich in this Province, there is scarce any Man so poor as to be reduced to a State of Beggary; but if any one happens to be disabled by Age or Sickness from working, he is quartered upon

some substantial Planter, where he is plentifully provided for at the publick Charge; and not in the Manner that the Poor are provided for on this Side the Water, where they are, in a Manner, imprisoned, and just preserved from perishing.

THEIR County Courts have a Power of censuring and punishing all Masters that do not provide their Servants good and wholesome Diet, Cloathing, and Lodging; and these Courts have Power to redress any Grievance Servants may have Reason to complain of.

THE Property of all Money and Goods sent over to Servants, or carried with them, is reserved for them, and remains entirely at their Disposal.

REVOLUTIONS in Virginia.

IN the Year 1497, five Years after *Columbus* discovered that Part of *America*, which lies within the Tropick of *Cancer*, for the *Spaniards*, *Sebastian Cabot*, a Native of *Bristol*, of *Genoese* Extraction, was employed by *Henry VII.* King of *England*, to find a Passage to the *East-Indies* by the North-West, which he did not succeed in; but, in attempting it, discovered the North-East Coast of *America*, from *Cape Florida* in 25 Degrees of North Latitude, to 67 Degrees of North Latitude, from whence *England* claims a Right to that Country, prior to the *Spaniards*, or any other *European* Power. But, however it happened, the *English* never attempted to send Colonies to any Part of *America*, until the latter End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, about 100 Years after *Cabot's* Discovery, when her Majesty, who was at War with *Spain*, observing, that the most effectual Way to distress the *Spaniards*, would be to interrupt their Trade with *America*, and intercept the Galleons, which annually brought immense Treasures from thence, she fitted out several Squadrons of Men of War, commanded by *Drake*, *Hawkins*, *Raleigh*, and other experienced Commanders, to cruise on the Coast of *Spanish America*, and attack their Ports and Shipping in that Quarter of the World; and Mr. *Raleigh* receiving Intelligence, that there were Gold Mines